# On tau functions associated with linear systems 

Gordon Blower*<br>Department of Mathematics and Statistics Lancaster University, Lancaster LA1 4YF, UK<br>E-mail address: g.blower@lancaster.ac.uk<br>Samantha Newsham<br>Lancaster University, Lancaster LA1 4YF, UK<br>samantha.l.newsham@gmail.com

26th June 2017

* corresponding author


#### Abstract

Let $(-A, B, C)$ be a linear system in continuous time $t>0$ with input and output space $\mathbf{C}$ and state space $H$. The function $\phi_{(x)}(t)=C e^{-(t+2 x) A} B$ determines a Hankel integral operator $\Gamma_{\phi_{(x)}}$ on $L^{2}((0, \infty) ; \mathbf{C})$; if $\Gamma_{\phi_{(x)}}$ is trace class, then the Fredholm determinant $\tau(x)=\operatorname{det}(I+$ $\left.\Gamma_{\phi(x)}\right)$ defines the tau function of $(-A, B, C)$. Such tau functions arise in Tracy and Widom's theory of matrix models, where they describe the fundamental probability distributions of random matrix theory. Dyson considered such tau functions in the inverse spectral problem for Schrödinger's equation $-f^{\prime \prime}+u f=\lambda f$, and derived the formula for the potential $u(x)=$ $-2 \frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \log \tau(x)$ in the self-adjoint scattering case Commun. Math. Phys. 47 (1976), 171183. This paper introduces a operator function $R_{x}$ that satisfies Lyapunov's equation $\frac{d R_{x}}{d x}=$ $-A R_{x}-R_{x} A$ and $\tau(x)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\right)$, without assumptions of self-adjointness. When $-A$ is sectorial, and $B, C$ are Hilbert-Schmidt, there exists a non-commutative differential ring $\mathcal{A}$ of operators in $H$ and a differential ring homomorphism $\left\rfloor: \mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathbf{C}\left[u, u^{\prime}, \ldots\right]\right.$ such that $u=-4\lfloor A\rfloor$, which provides a substitute for the multiplication rules for Hankel operators considered by Pöppe, and McKean Cent. Eur. J. Math. 9 (2011), 205-243. The paper obtains conditions on $(-A, B, C)$ for Schrödinger's equation with meromorphic $u$ to be integrable by quadratures. Special results apply to the linear systems associated with scattering $u$, periodic $u$ and elliptic $u$. The paper constructs a family of solutions to the Kadomtsev-Petviashivili differential equations, and proves that certain families of tau functions satisfy Fay's identities.


MSC Classification 47B35, 34B25
Key words: integrable systems, KdV, inverse scattering, Schottky-Klein function

## 1. Introduction

This paper is concerned with Fredholm determinants which arise in the theory of linear systems and their application to differential equations such as the Kadomtsev-Petviashvili equation. For $\phi \in L^{2}((0, \infty) ; \mathbf{R})$, the Hankel integral operator corresponding to $\phi$ is $\Gamma_{\phi}$ where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Gamma_{\phi} f(x)=\int_{0}^{\infty} \phi(x+y) f(y) d y \quad\left(f \in L^{2}((0, \infty) ; \mathbf{C})\right. \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using the Laguerre system of orthogonal functions as in [60], one can express $\Gamma_{\phi}$ as a matrix $\left[\gamma_{j+k}\right]_{j, k=1}^{\infty}$ on $\ell^{2}$, which has the characteristic shape of a Hankel matrix, and one can establish criteria for the operator to be bounded on $L^{2}((0, \infty) ; \mathbf{C})$. Megretski, Peller and Treil [52] determined the possible spectrum and spectral multiplicity function that can arise from a bounded and self-adjoint Hankel operator. Thus they characterized the class of bounded self-adjoint Hankel operators up to unitary equivalence. Their method involved introducing suitable linear systems on a state space $H$, and this motivated the approach of our paper.

Previously, Dyson [20] considered the inverse spectral problem for Schrödinger's equation $-f^{\prime \prime}+u f=\lambda f$, where $u \in C^{2}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{R})$ that decays rapidly as $x \rightarrow \pm \infty$. From the asymptotic solutions, he introduced a scattering function $\phi$, and considered the translations $\phi_{(x)}(y)=$ $\phi(y+2 x)$. He showed that the potential can be recovered from the scattering data by means of the formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x)=-2 \frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \log \operatorname{det}\left(I+\Gamma_{\phi_{(x)}}\right) . \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

These results were developed further by Ercolani, McKean [22] and others [36, 69, 73] to describe the inverse spectral problem for self-adjoint Schrödinger operators on $\mathbf{R}$. Remarkably, some of the methods of inverse scattering theory do not really need self-adjointness. However, a significant obstacle in this approach is that Hankel operators do not have a natural product structure, so it is unclear as to how one can fully exploit the multiplicative properties of determinants. This paper seeks to address this issue, by realizing Hankel operators from linear systems, and then introducing algebras of operators which reflect the properties of Hankel operators and their Fredholm determinants. As in [52], the Lyapunov differential equation is fundamental to the development of the theory.

Definition (i) (Lyapunov equation). Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space, known as the state space, and $\mathcal{L}(H)$ the space of bounded linear operators on $H$ with the usual operator norm. Let $\left(e^{-t A}\right)_{t \geq 0}$ be a strongly continuous $\left(C_{0}\right)$ semigroup of bounded linear operators on $H$ such that $\left\|e^{-t A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} \leq M$ for all $t \geq 0$ and some $M<\infty$. Let $\mathcal{D}(A)$ be the domain of the generator $-A$ so that $\mathcal{D}(A)$ is itself a Hilbert space for the graph norm $\|\xi\|_{\mathcal{D}(A)}^{2}=\|\xi\|_{H}^{2}+\|A \xi\|_{H}^{2}$, and let $A^{\dagger}$ be the adjoint of $A$. Let $R:(0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{L}(H)$ be a differentiable function. The Lyapunov equation is

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{d R_{z}}{d z}=A R_{z}+R_{z} A \quad(z>0) \tag{1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the right-hand side is to be interpreted as a bounded bilinear form on $\mathcal{D}(A) \times \mathcal{D}\left(A^{\dagger}\right)$.
(ii) (Operator ideals). Let $\mathcal{L}^{2}(H)$ be the space of Hilbert-Schmidt operators on $H$, and $\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$ be the space of trace class operators on $H$, so $\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)=\{T: T=V W ; V, W \in$ $\left.\mathcal{L}^{2}(H)\right\}$ and let det be the Fredholm determinant defined on $\left\{I+T: T \in \mathcal{L}^{1}(H)\right\}$; see [67].
(iii) (Tau function). Suppose further that $R_{x} \in \mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$ for all $x>x_{0}$ for some $x_{0} \in \mathbf{R}$. Then the tau function is $\tau(x)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\right)$ for $x>x_{0}$.

The significant applications of this equation arises for linear systems.

Definition (i) (Linear system). Let $H_{0}$ be a complex separable Hilbert space which serves as the input and output spaces; let $B: H_{0} \rightarrow H$ and $C: H \rightarrow H_{0}$ be bounded linear operators. The continuous-time linear system $(-A, B, C)$ is

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d X}{d t} & =-A X+B U \\
Y & =C X \\
X(0) & =0 \tag{1.4}
\end{align*}
$$

(ii) (Scattering function). The scattering function is $\phi(x)=C e^{-x A} B$, which is a bounded and weakly continuous function $\phi:(0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{L}\left(H_{0}\right)$. In control theory, the transfer function is the Laplace transform of $\phi$.
(iii) (Hankel operator). Suppose that $\phi \in L^{2}\left((0, \infty) ; \mathcal{L}\left(H_{0}\right)\right)$. Then the corresponding Hankel operator is $\Gamma_{\phi}$ on $L^{2}\left((0, \infty) ; H_{0}\right)$, where $\Gamma_{\phi} f(x)=\int_{0}^{\infty} \phi(x+y) f(y) d y$; see [58, 60] for boundedness criteria.
Definition (Admissible linear system). Let $(-A, B, C)$ be a linear system as above; suppose furthermore that the observability operator $\Theta_{0}: L^{2}\left((0, \infty) ; H_{0}\right) \rightarrow H$ is bounded, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Theta_{0} f=\int_{0}^{\infty} e^{-s A^{\dagger}} C^{\dagger} f(s) d s \tag{1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

suppose that the controllability operator $\Xi_{0}: L^{2}\left((0, \infty) ; H_{0}\right) \rightarrow H$ is also bounded, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Xi_{0} f=\int_{0}^{\infty} e^{-s A} B f(s) d s \tag{1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

(i) Then $(-A, B, C)$ is an admissible linear system.
(ii) Suppose furthermore that $\Theta_{0}$ and $\Xi_{0}$ belong to the ideal $\mathcal{L}^{2}$ of Hilbert-Schmidt operators. Then we say that $(-A, B, C)$ is $(2,2)$-admissible.

The scattering map associates to any $(2,2)$ admissible linear system $(-A, B, C)$ the corresponding scattering function $\phi(x)=C e^{-x A} B$. In Corollary 2.3, we show that for a suitable addition and multiplication on the linear systems, this map is additive and multiplicative.

The inverse scattering problem involves recovering data about $u$ from $\phi$, as in (1.2). In section 2 of this paper, we analyze the existence and uniqueness problem for the Lyapunov equation, and show that for any $(2,2)$ admissible linear system, the operator

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{x}=\int_{x}^{\infty} e^{-t A} B C e^{-t A} d t \tag{1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

is trace class and gives the unique solution to (1.3) with the initial condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\frac{d R_{x}}{d x}\right)_{x=0}=-A R_{0}-R_{0} A=-B C . \tag{1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also, $R_{x} \in \mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$ and the Fredholm determinant satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{det}\left(I+\lambda R_{x}\right)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+\lambda \Gamma_{\phi_{(x)}}\right) \quad(x>0, \lambda \in \mathbf{C}) \tag{1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Definition (Tau function). Given an $(2,2)$ admissible linear system $(-A, B, C)$, we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau(x)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\right) \tag{1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using this general definition of $\tau$, we can unify several results from the scattering theory of ordinary differential equations. Such tau functions are strongly analogous to the tau functions introduced by Jimbo, Miwa and Ueno [55, 33] to describe the isomonodromy of rational differential equations.

The Gelfand-Levitan-Marchenko equation provides the linkage between $\phi$ and $u$ via $R_{x}$. Consider

$$
\begin{equation*}
T(x, y)+\Phi(x+y)+\mu \int_{x}^{\infty} T(x, z) \Phi(z+y) d z=0 \quad(0<x<y) \tag{1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $T(x, y)$ and $\Phi(x+y)$ are $m \times m$ matrices with scalar entries. In the context of $(-A, B, C)$ we assume that $\Phi(x)=C e^{-x A} B$ is known and aim to find $T(x, y)$. In section two, we use $R_{x}$ to construct solutions to the associated Gelfand-Levitan equation (1.11), and introduce a potential

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x)=-2 \frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \log \operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\right) \tag{1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then we obtain a differential equation linking $\phi(x)$ to $u(x)$. In examples of interest in scattering theory, one can calculate $\operatorname{det}\left(I+\lambda R_{x}\right)$ more easily than the Hankel determinant of $\Gamma_{\phi_{(x)}}$ directly [20, 22, 47, 61], since $R_{x}$ has additional properties that originate from Lyapunov's equation. In section two, we establish properties of $R_{x}$ and $\tau$ for $(2,2)$ admissible linear systems, and use $R_{x}$ to solve the Gelfand-Levitan equation.
Definition (Sectorial operator). For $0<\theta \leq \pi$, we introduce the sector $S_{\theta}=\{z \in \mathbf{C} \backslash\{0\}$ : $|\arg z|<\theta\}$. A closed and densely defined linear operator $-A$ is sectorial [21] if there exists $\pi / 2<\theta<\pi$ such that $S_{\theta}$ is contained in the resolvent set of $-A$ and $|\lambda|\left\|(\lambda I+A)^{-1}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} \leq M$ for all $\lambda \in S_{\theta}$. Let $\mathcal{D}(A)$ be the domain of $A$ and $\mathcal{D}\left(A^{\infty}\right)=\cap_{n=0}^{\infty} \mathcal{D}\left(A^{n}\right)$.
Definition (Deformations). There are three basic deformations of a (2,2)-admissible linear system $\Sigma=(-A, B, C)$ with $H_{0}=\mathbf{C}$ and $-A$ a sectorial operator, with corresponding effects on tau functions.
(i) Translation takes $\Sigma \mapsto \Sigma(a)$, where $\Sigma(a)=\left(-A, B e^{-a A}, C e^{-a A}\right)$ and $\tau(x) \mapsto \tau(x+a)$ for $a \in \Omega$. The translation operation is accounted for in the properties of Hankel operators, and is used in section two.
(ii) The Miura transform is the involution $(-A, B, C) \mapsto(-A, B,-C)$. In section three, we show that the tau functions $\tau_{\infty}$ for $(-A, B, C)$ and $\tau_{0}$ for $(-A, B,-C)$ satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau_{0}^{\prime \prime}(x) \tau_{\infty}(x)-2 \tau_{0}^{\prime}(x) \tau_{\infty}^{\prime}(x)+\tau_{0}(x) \tau_{\infty}^{\prime \prime}(x)=0 \tag{1.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) The Darboux addition (spectral shift) [47] maps $\Sigma \mapsto \Sigma_{\zeta}$ where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Sigma_{\zeta}=\left(-A,(\zeta I+A)(\zeta I-A)^{-1} B, C\right) \quad\left(-\zeta \in S_{\theta}\right) \tag{1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

has tau function $\tau_{\zeta}$. In section three, we use this operation to construct families of solutions to Schrödinger's equation.

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\psi_{\zeta}^{\prime \prime}(x)+u(x) \psi_{\zeta}(x)=-\zeta^{2} \psi_{\zeta}(x) \quad(x>0) \tag{1.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $u$ is typically complex-valued. When interpreting results, it is important to realize that there is no simple connection between the spectrum of $A$ on $H$ and the spectrum of Schrödinger's equation on $L^{2}((0, \infty) ; \mathbf{C})$.
Definition (State ring). Let $\Omega$ be a domain in $\mathbf{C}$ such that $z, w \in \Omega$ implies $z+w \in \Omega$. Suppose that $I+R_{x}$ is invertible for all $x \in \Omega$ and so $F_{x}=\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1} \in \mathcal{L}(H)$, and $F_{x}-I \in \mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$. Suppose momentarily that $A \in \mathcal{L}(H)$. We introduce an algebra $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}$ of holomorphic functions from $\Omega$ to $\mathcal{L}(H)$, which is generated by $I, A \in \mathcal{L}(H)$ and $F_{x}(x \in \Omega)$, and is a differential ring for the usual pointwise multiplication and differentiation $d / d x$ over $\Omega$ as in [63]. We define a new multiplication

$$
\begin{equation*}
P * Q=P(A F+F A-2 F A F) Q \tag{1.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

on $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}$, and a new differentiation $\partial: \mathcal{A}_{\Sigma} \rightarrow \mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial P=A(I-2 F) P+\frac{d P}{d x}+P(I-2 F) A \tag{1.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that $(\mathcal{A}, *, \partial)$ is a differential ring. Let $\mathcal{M}_{\Omega}$ be the meromorphic complex functions on $\Omega$, with the usual pointwise operations. Then we define the bracket

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lfloor P\rfloor=C e^{-x A} F_{x} P F_{x} e^{-x A} B, \tag{1.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that $\lfloor\rfloor:.\left(\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}, *, \partial\right) \rightarrow\left(\mathcal{M}_{\Omega}, \cdot, d / d x\right)$ is a differential ring homomorphism, so $\lfloor P * Q\rfloor=$ $\lfloor P\rfloor\lfloor Q\rfloor$ and $(d / d x)\lfloor P\rfloor=\lfloor\partial P\rfloor$.

This algebra $\left(\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}, *, \partial\right)$ is generally non commutative, is realized as an algebra of operators on the space space $H$ of $(-A, B, C)$, and provides a substitute for the multiplication structure that is lacking in the theory of Hankel operators. Our main result is as follows.
Theorem 1.1. Suppose that $\Sigma=(-A, B, C)$ is a $(2,2)$ admissible linear system with $-A$ sectorial for $S_{\theta}$ and $H_{0}=\mathbf{C}$.
(i) Then there exist $x_{0}>0$ and a solution $R_{x}$ to (1.3) and (1.8) such that $\tau(x)=$ $\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\right)$ is holomorphic and $u(x)$ is meromorphic for $x \in \Omega$ where $\Omega=\left\{x_{0}+z: z \in S_{\theta-\pi / 2}\right\}$.
(ii) The tau functions for $\Sigma$ and $\Sigma_{\zeta}$ give $\psi_{\zeta}(x)=e^{\zeta x} \tau_{\zeta}(x) / \tau(x)$ that satisfies (1.15) for $-\zeta \in S_{\theta}$.
(iii) There exists a differential algebra $\left(\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}, *, \partial\right)$ on $\Omega$ which contains $F_{x}=\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}$ and there exists a differential ring homomorphism $\lfloor\rfloor:. \mathcal{A}_{\Sigma} \rightarrow \mathcal{M}_{\Omega}$ such that $u=-4\lfloor A\rfloor$.
(iv) If $A$ satisfies $\lfloor p(A)\rfloor=0$ for some non-zero odd complex polynomial $p$, then $\mathbf{C}[u, \partial u / \partial x, \ldots$,$] is a Noetherian differential ring for \partial / \partial x$ and the standard multiplication.
(v) If $\left\lfloor A^{2 m-1}\right\rfloor=0$ for some $m$, then (1.15) can be integrated by quadratures.

In sections 4 and 5 we show that $\lfloor\cdot\rfloor$ maps $\left(-4 \partial^{j} A\right)_{j=0}^{\infty}$ to $\left(u^{(j)}\right)_{j=0}^{\infty}$, and $\left((-1)^{j} 2 A^{2 j-1}\right)_{j=1}^{\infty}$ to $\left(f_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{\infty}$, where $\left(f_{j}\right)$ satisfies the stationary $K d V$ hierarchy. This provides the crucial link between algebraic properties of $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}$ for $\Sigma=(-A, B, C)$ and the spectral Schrödinger equation.

We recall that a compact Riemann surface $\mathcal{E}$ is hyperelliptic if and only if there exists a meromorphic function on $\mathcal{E}$ that has precisely two poles. In this case, there is a two-sheeted cover $\mathcal{E} \rightarrow \mathbf{P}^{1}$ with $2 g+2$ branch points, where $g$ is the genus of $\mathcal{E}$. The elliptic case has $g=1$. In case (v), $u$ is associated a meromorphic function on a hyperelliptic curve, and the potential is said to be finite-gap or algebro-geometric; see [14, 29].

Theorem 1.1 applies to scattering potentials such that $u(x) \rightarrow 0$ as $x \rightarrow \infty$. The case of periodic potentials is considered in sections 6 and 7 of this paper.
Definition (Periodic linear system). Let $A \in \mathcal{L}(H)$ be such that $\left(e^{x A}\right)_{x \in \mathbf{R}}$ is a periodic group, and let $B \in \mathcal{L}\left(H_{0}, H\right)$ and $C \in \mathcal{L}\left(H, H_{0}\right)$ satisfy $A E+E A=B C$ for some $E \in \mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$. Then $\Sigma=(-A, B, C ; E)$ is a uniformly periodic linear system, and $\tau(x)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+e^{x A} E e^{x A}\right)$ is the corresponding tau function.

In section 6 of this paper, we introduce a ring $\left(\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}, *, \partial\right)$ for periodic linear systems. The periodic linear system $\Sigma$ has a tau function $\tau$ and a periodic potential $u$, as in Hill's equation $-f^{\prime \prime}+u f=\lambda f$. Hence $\Sigma$ is associated with Hill's discriminant $\Delta(\lambda)$ and a spectral curve $\mathcal{E}$, which is typically a transcendental hyperelliptic curve of infinite genus. The Jacobi variety $\mathbf{X}$ of $\mathcal{E}$ is then an infinite dimensional complex torus.

We show that if $u$ is an elliptic function, then there exist uniformly periodic linear systems with tau functions $\tau_{1}$ and $\tau_{0}$ such that $u(x)=\tau_{1}(x) / \tau_{0}(x)$. Also, we show that if Hill's equation for this $u$ has general solution $f(x ; \lambda)$ that is meromorphic in $x$ for all but finitely many $\lambda \in \mathbf{C}$, then there exist uniformly periodic linear systems with tau function $\tau_{3}(x ; \lambda)$ and $\tau_{4}(x ; \lambda)$ such that $f(x ; \lambda)=\tau_{3}(x ; \lambda) / \tau_{4}(x ; \lambda)$.

Using results of Gesztesy and Weikard [31], we prove a partial converse, namely that if Hill's equation has a general solution of the form $f(x ; \lambda)=\tau_{3}(x ; \lambda) / \tau_{4}(x ; \lambda)$ for all $\lambda \in \mathbf{C}$, where $\tau_{3}(x ; \lambda)$ and $\tau_{4}(x ; \lambda)$ are the tau functions of uniformly periodic linear systems, then $u$ is an algebro geometric potential and is associated with a hyperelliptic spectral curve $\mathcal{E}$ of finite genus.

The notion of a tau function of a linear system generalizes the classical concept of a theta function for an algebraic curve. We recall that a complete complex algebraic curves is associated with a finite dimensional Jacobian variety which has dimension determined by the genus of the curve. Riemann's theta functions may be defined on such a variety, and they satisfy some addition rules known as Fay's identities, which reflect the geometry of the underlying curve [23]. Ercolani and McKean [22] observed that Fay's identities can be deduced from secant identities which relate to the properties of Wronskians of suitably chosen functions. In this spirit, we prove that tau functions of linear systems satisfy some Wronskian identities which are counterparts of Fay's identities. Mumford [56] observed that Fay's identities give rise to nontrivial solutions of certain partial differential equations.

The Kadomtsev-Petviashvili equations describe the waves in a two dimensional dissipative medium where the scale of the propagation of the wave along the $y$-axis is much larger than the longitudinal scale along the $x$-axis. We write

$$
\begin{equation*}
K P \quad \frac{\partial}{\partial x}\left(\frac{\partial^{3} u}{\partial x^{3}}-6 u \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}+4 \lambda \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}+4 \alpha \frac{\partial u}{\partial s}\right)+3 \beta^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial y^{2}}=0, \tag{1.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the $\alpha, \beta, \lambda \in \mathbf{C}$ are parameters. Krichever showed that any tau function that arises from the theta function on the Jacobi variety of a complete complex algebraic curve satisfies $K P$. Shiota [66] and Mulase [56] proved the converse, that if $\tau$ is the theta function of a finitedimensional Abelian manifold, and $\tau$ gives a potential that satisfies $K P$, then the Abelian manifold arises as a Jacobi variety of a complex algebraic curve.

In section 9 , we show that the $\tau$ functions of general linear systems under a group of deformations give rise to a set of solutions of the $K P$ equations.
Theorem 1.2. Let $\left(-A_{1}, B_{0}, C_{0}\right)$ and $\left(-A_{2}, B_{0}, C_{0}\right)$ be (2,2) admissible linear systems with input and output spaces $\mathbf{C}$, where $A_{1}, A_{2} \in \mathcal{L}(H)$. Let

$$
C(y ; t)=C_{0} e^{t\left(A_{1}^{3}+\lambda A_{1}\right) / \alpha-y A_{1}^{2} / \beta}, \quad B(y ; t)=e^{t\left(A_{2}^{3}+\lambda A_{2}\right) / \alpha+y A_{2}^{2} / \beta} B_{0}
$$

then with

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{x}(y, t)=\int_{x}^{\infty} e^{-A_{2} s} B(y ; t) C(y ; t) e^{-A_{1} s} d s \tag{1.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

let

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, y, t)=-2 \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial x^{2}} \log \operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}(y, t)\right) \tag{1.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $u$ satisfies $K P$ in the form (1.19).
The $K P$ differential equation is the first in a sequence of nonlinear partial differential equations known as the $K P$ hierarchy. Shiota [66] proved that these are related by an integral involving a family of tau functions which are subject to a group of deformations involving infinitely many parameters. We introduce a family of linear systems which are subject to a group of deformations, and also show that such a family gives tau functions which make Shiota's integral vanish; this condition is known to give solutions of the $K P$ hierarchy.

## 2. $\tau$ functions in terms of Lyapunov's equation and the Gelfand-Levitan equation

The following proves uniqueness of solutions of the Lyapunov equation (1.3), in a style suggested by [60, p 503]. Peller [60] discusses scattering functions that produce bounded selfadjoint Hankel operators $\Gamma_{\phi}$, and their realization in terms of continuous time linear systems. He observes that in some cases one needs a bounded semigroup with unbounded generator $(-A)$. We prove the uniqueness results for bounded and strongly continuous semigroups, then specialize to holomorphic semigroups. The main application is to the Gelfand-Levitan equation, and associated determinants.
Proposition 2.1. Let $\left(e^{-t A}\right)_{t \geq 0}$ be a strongly continuous and weakly asymptotically stable semigroup on a complex Hilbert space $H$, so $e^{-t A} f \rightarrow 0$ weakly as $t \rightarrow \infty$ for all $f \in H$. Then
(i) $S_{t}: R \mapsto e^{-t A} R e^{-t A}$ for $t \geq 0$ defines a strongly continuous semigroup on $\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$, which has generator $(-L)$, with dense domain of definition $\mathcal{D}(L)$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
L(R)=A R+R A \quad(R \in \mathcal{D}) \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) The linear operator $L: \mathcal{D}(L) \rightarrow \mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$ is injective, and each $R_{0} \in \mathcal{D}(L)$ with $L\left(R_{0}\right)=$ $X$, there exists a weakly convergent improper integral

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{0}=\int_{0}^{\infty} e^{-t A} X e^{-t A} d t \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) Suppose moreover that $\left\|e^{-t_{0} A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)}<1$ for some $t_{0}>0$. Then $L: \mathcal{D}(L) \rightarrow \mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$ is surjective, the integral (2.2) converges absolutely in $\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$ and $R_{0}$ gives the unique solution to $A R_{0}+R_{0} A=X$.

Proof. (i) First observe that by the uniform boundedness theorem, there exists $M$ such that $\left\|e^{-t A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} \leq M$ for all $t \geq 0$, so $\left(e^{-t A}\right)_{t \geq 0}$ is uniformly bounded. Also, the adjoint semigroup $\left(e^{-t A^{\dagger}}\right)_{t \geq 0}$ is also strongly continuous and uniformly bounded, so $A$ and $A^{\dagger}$ have dense domains $\mathcal{D}(A)$ and $\mathcal{D}\left(A^{\dagger}\right)$ in $H$.

Now $\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)=H \hat{\otimes} H$, the projective tensor product, so for all $X \in \mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$, there exists a nuclear decomposition $X=\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} B_{j} C_{j}$ where $B_{j}, C_{j} \in H$ satisfy $\|X\|_{\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)}=\sum_{j=1}^{\infty}\left\|B_{j}\right\|_{H}\left\|C_{j}\right\|_{H}$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{t}(X)-X=\sum_{j=1}^{\infty}\left(e^{-t A} B_{j} C_{j} e^{-t A}-B_{j} C_{j} e^{-t A}\right)+\sum_{j=1}^{\infty}\left(B_{j} C_{j} e^{-t A}-B_{j} C_{j}\right) \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left(e^{-t A}\right)$ is bounded, $\left\|e^{-t A} B_{j}-B_{j}\right\|_{H} \rightarrow 0$ and $\left\|e^{-t A^{\dagger}} C_{j}-C_{j}\right\|_{H} \rightarrow 0$ as $t \rightarrow 0+$, so $\left\|S_{t}(X)-X\right\|_{\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)} \rightarrow 0$ as $t \rightarrow 0+$, so $\left(S_{t}\right)_{t \geq 0}$ is strongly continuous on $\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$. By semigroup theory, there exists a dense linear subspace $\mathcal{D}(L)$ of $\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$ such that $S_{t}(R)$ is differentiable at $t=0+$ for all $R \in \mathcal{D}$, and $(d / d t)_{t=0+} S_{t}(R)=-A R-R A$, so the generator is $(-L)$, where $L(R)=A R+R A$.
(ii) Certainly $\mathcal{D}$ contains $\mathcal{D}\left(A^{\dagger}\right) \hat{\otimes} \mathcal{D}(A)$ in $\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)=H \hat{\otimes} H$. Choosing $f \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ and $g \in \mathcal{D}\left(A^{\dagger}\right)$, we find that

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d}{d t}\left\langle e^{-t A} R_{0} e^{-t A} f, g\right\rangle & =-\left\langle e^{-t A}\left(A R_{0}+R_{0} A\right) e^{-t A} f, g\right\rangle \\
& =-\left\langle e^{-t A} X e^{-t A} f, g\right\rangle \tag{2.4}
\end{align*}
$$

a continuous function of $t>0$, so integrating we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle R_{0} f, g\right\rangle-\left\langle e^{-s A} R_{0} e^{-s A} f, g\right\rangle=\int_{0}^{s}\left\langle e^{-t A} X e^{-t A} f, g\right\rangle d t \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

We extend this identity to all $f, g \in H$ by joint continuity; then we let $s \rightarrow \infty$ and observe that $R_{0}: H \rightarrow H$ is trace class and hence is completely continuous, hence $R_{0}$ maps the weakly null family $\left(e^{-s A} f\right)_{s \rightarrow \infty}$ to the norm convergent family $\left(R_{0} e^{-s A} f\right)_{s \rightarrow \infty}$, so $\left\langle e^{-s A} R_{0} e^{-s A} f, g\right\rangle \rightarrow 0$ as $s \rightarrow \infty$, hence we have a weakly convergent improper integral

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle R_{0} f, g\right\rangle=\lim _{s \rightarrow \infty} \int_{0}^{s}\left\langle e^{-t A} X e^{-t A} f, g\right\rangle d t \quad(f, g \in H) \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) The function $t \mapsto e^{-t A} X e^{-t A}$ takes values in the separable space $\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$ and is weakly continuous, hence strongly measurable, by Pettis's theorem. By considering the spectral radius, Engel and Nagel [21] show that there exist $\delta>0$ and $M_{\delta}>0$ such that $\left\|e^{-t A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} \leq M_{\delta} e^{-\delta t}$ for all $t \geq 0$; hence (2.2) converges as a Bochner-Lebesgue integral with

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|R_{x}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)} & \leq \int_{x}^{\infty} M_{\delta}^{2}\|X\|_{\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)} e^{-2 \delta t} d t \\
& \leq \frac{M_{\delta}^{2}}{2 \delta}\|X\|_{\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)} e^{-2 \delta x} \tag{2.7}
\end{align*}
$$

Furthermore, $A$ is a closed linear operator and satisfies

$$
\begin{align*}
A \int_{x}^{s} e^{-t A} X e^{-t A} d t+\int_{x}^{s} e^{-t A} X e^{-t A} d t A & =\int_{x}^{s}-\frac{d}{d t}\left(e^{-t A} X e^{-t A}\right) d t \\
& =e^{-x A} X e^{-x A}-e^{-T A} X e^{-T A} \\
& \rightarrow e^{-x A} X e^{-x A} \tag{2.8}
\end{align*}
$$

as $s \rightarrow \infty$ where $\int_{x}^{s} e^{-t A} X e^{-t A} d t \rightarrow R_{x}$; so $A R_{x}+R_{x} A=e^{-x A} X e^{-x A}$ for all $x \geq 0$. We deduce that $x \mapsto R_{x}$ is a differentiable function from $(0, \infty)$ to $\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$ and that the modified Lyapunov equation (1.3) holds.

The hypotheses (i) and (ii) are symmetrical under the adjoint $\left(A, R_{0}\right) \mapsto\left(A^{\dagger}, R_{0}^{\dagger}\right)$; however, the hypothesis (iii) is rather stringent, and will be replaced in examples by sharper conditions.
We introduce Lyapunov's equation, and the existence of solutions for suitable ( $-A, B, C$ ). The solution $R_{x}$ is defined by a formula suggested by Heinz's theorem [8] and has properties analogous to the resolvent operator of a semigroup.
Definition ((2,2) admissible linear systems). (i) Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space and let $\Sigma=(-A, B, C)$ be a linear system with state space $H$. Suppose that there is a weakly convergent integral

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{c}=\int_{0}^{\infty} e^{-t A} B B^{\dagger} e^{-t A^{\dagger}} d t \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

which defines a bounded linear operator on $H$; then $W_{c}$ is the controllability Gramian. Suppose further that there exists a weakly convergent integral

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{o}=\int_{0}^{\infty} e^{-t A^{\dagger}} C^{\dagger} C e^{-t A} d t \tag{2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

which defines a bounded linear operator on $H$; then $W_{o}$ is the observability Gramian.
(ii) Then we define $R_{x}$ to be the bounded linear operator on $H$ determined by the weakly convergent integral

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{x}=\int_{x}^{\infty} e^{-t A} B C e^{-t A} d t \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) Then $\Sigma$ satisfying (i) is said to be balanced if $W_{c}=W_{o}$ and $\operatorname{ker}\left(W_{c}\right)=0$.
(iv) Also, $\Sigma$ satisfying (i) is said to be $(2,2)$ admissible if $W_{c}$ and $W_{o}$ are trace class.
(v) We introduce the scattering function $\phi(t)=C e^{-t A} B$ and the shifted scattering function $\phi_{(x)}(t)=\phi(t+2 x)$ for $x, t>0$.
(vi) The tau function of $\Sigma$ is $\tau(x)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\right)$.
(vii) For $0<\delta<\pi$, we introduce the sector $S_{\delta}=\{z \in \mathbf{C} \backslash\{0\}:|\arg z|<\delta\}$. For $\pi / 2<\delta<\pi$, we introduce $X_{\delta}=\left\{\zeta \in S_{\delta}:-\zeta \in S_{\delta}\right\}$ which is an open set, symmetrical about $i \mathbf{R}$ and bounded by lines passing through 0 .

Theorem 2.2. Let $(-A, B, C)$ be a linear system such that $\left\|e^{-t_{0} A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)}<1$ for some $t_{0}>0$, and that $B$ and $C$ are Hilbert-Schmidt operators such that $\|B\|_{\mathcal{L}^{2}\left(H_{0} ; H\right)}\|C\|_{\mathcal{L}^{2}\left(H ; H_{0}\right)} \leq 1$. Suppose further that $-A$ is sectorial on $S_{\theta}$ for some $\pi / 2<\theta<\pi$.
(i) Then $(-A, B, C)$ is $(2,2)$-admissible, so the trace class operators $R_{x}$ give the solution to Lyapunov's equation (1.3) for $x>0$ that satisfies the initial condition (1.8), and the solution to (1.3) with (1.8) is unique.
(ii) The function $\tau(x)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\right)$ is differentiable for $x \in(0, \infty)$.
(iii) Then $R_{z}$ extends to a holomorphic function which satisfies (1.3) on $S_{\theta-\pi / 2}$, and $R_{z} \rightarrow 0$ as $z \rightarrow \infty$ in $S_{\theta-\varepsilon-\pi / 2}$ for all $0<\varepsilon<\theta-\pi / 2$.
Proof. (i) Since $B C \in \mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$, the integrand of (2.11) takes values in $\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$, and we can apply Proposition 2.1(iii) to $X=B C$.
(ii) The Fredholm determinant $R \mapsto \operatorname{det}(I+R)$ is a continuous function on $\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$. Also the integral $R_{x}=\int_{x}^{\infty} e^{-t A} B C e^{-t A} d t$ belongs to $\mathcal{D}(L)$ and gives a differentiable function of $x>0$ with values in $\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$.
(iii) By classical results of Hille, $\left(e^{-z A}\right)_{z \in S_{\theta-\pi / 2}}$ defines an analytic semigroup on $S_{\theta-\pi / 2}$, bounded on $S_{\nu}$ for all $0<\nu<\theta-\pi / 2$, so we can define $R_{z}=e^{-z A} R_{0} e^{-z A}$ and obtain an analytic solution to Lyapunov's equation. For all $0<\varepsilon<\theta-\pi / 2$, there exists $M_{\varepsilon}^{\prime}$ such that $\left\|e^{-z A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} \leq M_{\varepsilon}^{\prime}$ for all $z \in S_{\delta}$ where $\delta=\theta-\varepsilon-\pi / 2$. Now for $z \in S_{\delta / 2}$, we write $z=x / 2+$ $(x / 2+i y)$ with $x / 2+i y \in S_{\delta}$ and use the bound $\left\|e^{-z A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} \leq\left\|e^{-x A / 2}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)}\left\|e^{-(x / 2+i y) A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)}$ to obtain $\left\|e^{-z A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} \leq M_{\varepsilon}^{\prime 2}\left\|e^{-t_{0} A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)}^{x /\left(4 t_{0}\right)}$, so $\left\|e^{-z A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} \rightarrow 0$ exponentially fast as $z \rightarrow \infty$ in the sector $S_{\delta / 2}$. Hence $R_{z}$ is holomorphic and bounded on $S_{(\theta-\varepsilon-\pi / 2)}$ and by (2.7), $R_{z} \rightarrow 0$ as $z \rightarrow \infty$ in $S_{(\theta-\varepsilon-\pi / 2) / 2}$.

Definition Given $M, \varepsilon>0$ and $0<\delta<\pi / 2$, let $\mathcal{R}(\delta, M, \varepsilon)$ be the space of all the holomorphic functions $\psi: S_{\delta} \rightarrow \mathbf{C}$ such that $e^{\varepsilon|z|}|\psi(z)| \leq M$ for all $z \in S_{\delta}$. Then let $\mathcal{R}=$ $\cup_{0<M, 0<\varepsilon, 0<\delta<\pi} \mathcal{R}(\delta, M, \varepsilon)$.

We note that by Cauchy's estimates, $\mathcal{R}$ has the following properties:
(i) $\phi^{\prime} \in \mathcal{R}$ for all $\phi \in \mathcal{R}$;
(ii) for all $\phi \in \mathcal{R}$, there exists $\psi \in \mathcal{R}$ such that $\psi^{\prime}=\phi$;
(iii) if $\phi \in \mathcal{R}$, then $e^{\phi}-1 \in \mathcal{R}$;
(iv) $\mathcal{R}+\mathbf{C}$ is an integral domain under pointwise addition and multiplication;
(v) $\mathcal{R}+\mathbf{C}$ is closed under taking of exponentials.

Hence we can therefore form the field of fractions of $\mathcal{R}+\mathbf{C}$ to obtain a differential field $\mathcal{F}$, so that every elements of $\mathcal{F}$ is meromorphic on some sector $S_{\eta}$.

Corollary 2.3. The set of scattering functions $\phi$ which arise from the (2,2) admissible linear systems as in Theorem 2.2 gives a subring of $\mathcal{R}$.

Proof. Let $\left(-A_{j}, B_{j}, C_{j}\right)$ be $(2,2)$ admissible linear system with scattering function $\phi_{j}$ as in Theorem 2.2 for $j=1,2$. Then by Theorem $2.2($ iii $)$ the scattering functions satisfy $\phi_{j} \in \mathcal{R}$.

The linear system

$$
\left(\left[\begin{array}{cc}
-A_{1} & 0  \tag{2.12}\\
0 & -A_{2}
\end{array}\right],\left[\begin{array}{l}
B_{1} \\
B_{2}
\end{array}\right],\left[\begin{array}{ll}
C_{1} & C_{2}
\end{array}\right]\right) .
$$

is $(2,2)$-admissible with scattering function $\phi_{1}(x)+\phi_{2}(x)$, as one checks by direct calculation.
The linear system

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(-\left(A_{1} \otimes I+I \otimes A_{2}\right), B_{1} \otimes B_{2}, C_{1} \otimes C_{2}\right) \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

is also $(2,2)$ admissible with scattering function $\phi_{1}(x) \phi_{2}(x)$. One checks that the semigroups $\left(e^{-t A_{1}} \otimes I\right)_{t>0}$ and likewise $\left(I \otimes e^{-t A_{2}}\right)_{t>0}$ are strongly continuous on the tensor product Hilbert space $H \otimes H$, then $\left(e^{-t A_{1}} \otimes e^{-t A_{2}}\right)_{t>0}$ is strongly continuous on $H \otimes H$ by B 15 of Engel]. Also, $B_{1} \otimes B_{2}$ and $C_{1} \otimes C_{2}$ are Hilbert-Schmidt, as one checks by considering orthonormal bases.

Example. Let $\Delta=-d^{2} / d x^{2}$ be the usual Laplace operator which is essentially self-adjoint and non-negative on $C_{c}^{\infty}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{C})$ in $L^{2}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{C})$. We introduce $A=\sqrt{I+\Delta}$ which is given by the Fourier multiplier $\mathcal{F} A f(\xi)=\sqrt{1+\xi^{2}} \mathcal{F} f(\xi)$. Then $\left(e^{-z A}\right)$ and $\left(e^{-z A^{2}}\right)$ give bounded holomorphic semigroups on $H$, as in Theorem 2.2, on the right half-plane $\{z \in \mathbf{C}: \Re z \geq 0\}$, which is the closure of $S_{\pi / 2}$. On the imaginary axis, we have unitary groups ( $e^{i t A}$ ) and $\left(e^{-i t A^{2}}\right)$. By classical results from wave equations, we can write $e^{i t A}+e^{-i t A}=2 \cos (t A)$ where $u(x, t)=\cos (t A) f(x)$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, t)=\frac{1}{2}(f(x+t)+f(x-t))+\frac{t}{2} \int_{x-t}^{x+t} f(y) \frac{J_{0}^{\prime}\left(\sqrt{t^{2}-(x-s)^{2}}\right)}{\sqrt{t^{2}-(x-s)^{2}}} d s \quad\left(f \in C_{c}^{\infty}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{C})\right), . \tag{2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $J_{0}$ is Bessel's function of the first kind of order zero, and $u$ satisfies

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}}-\frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial t^{2}} & =u(x, t) \\
u(x, 0) & =f(x) ; \\
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}(x, 0) & =0 \tag{2.15}
\end{align*}
$$

Note that $\left(\exp \left(t(i A)^{2 j-1}\right)\right)$ gives a unitary group on $H$ for $j=0,1,2, \ldots$.
Definition (i) (Block Hankel operators). Say that $\Gamma \in \mathcal{L}(H)$ is block Hankel if there exists $1 \leq m<\infty$ such that $\Gamma$ is unitarily equivalent to the block matrix $\left[A_{j+k-2}\right]_{j, k=1}^{\infty}$ on $\ell^{2}\left(\mathbf{C}^{m}\right)$ where $A_{j}$ is a $m \times m$ complex matrix for $j=0,1, \ldots$.
(ii) Let $(-A, B, C)$ be a $(2,2)$ admissible linear system with input and output space $H_{0}$, where the dimension of $H_{0}$ over $\mathbf{C}$ is $m<\infty$. Then $m$ is the number of outputs of the system,
and systems with finite $m>1$ are known as MIMO for multiple input, multiple output, and give rise to block Hankel operators with $\Phi(x)=C e^{-x A} B$; see [60].
(iii) The Gelfand-Levitan integral equation for $(-A, B, C)$ as in (ii) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
T(x, y)+\Phi(x+y)+\mu \int_{x}^{\infty} T(x, z) \Phi(z+y) d z=0 \quad(0<x<y) \tag{2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $T(x, y)$ and $\Phi(x+y)$ are $m \times m$ matrices with scalar entries, and $\mu \in \mathbf{C}$.
Proposition 2.4. (i) In the notation of Theorem 2.2, there exists $x_{0}>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{\mu}(x, y)=-C e^{-x A}\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} e^{-y A} B \tag{2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

satisfies the integral equation (2.16) for $x_{0}<x<y$ and $|\mu|<1$.
(ii) The determinant satisfies $\operatorname{det}\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+\mu \Gamma_{\Phi_{(x)}}\right)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu \operatorname{trace} T_{\mu}(x, x)=\frac{d}{d x} \log \operatorname{det}\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right) \tag{2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) Suppose that $t \mapsto U(t)$ is a continuous function $[0,1] \rightarrow \mathcal{L}(H)$ such that $U(t) A=$ $A U(t)$ and $\|U(t)\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} \leq 1$. Then there is a family of $(2,2)$ admissible linear systems

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Sigma(t)=(-A, U(t) B, C U(t)) \quad(t \in[0,1]) ; \tag{2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

the corresponding tau function $\tau(x, t)$ is continuous for $(x, t) \in(0, \infty) \times[0,1]$.
Proof. (i) We choose $x_{0}$ so large that $e^{\delta x_{0}} \geq M_{\delta} / 2 \delta$, then by (2.7), we have $|\mu|\left\|R_{x}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)}<1$ for $x>x_{0}$, so $I+\mu R_{x}$ is invertible. Substituting into the integral equation, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
C e^{-(x+y) A} B & -C e^{-x A}\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} e^{-y A} B \\
& -\mu C e^{-x A}\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} \int_{x}^{\infty} e^{-z A} B C e^{-z A} d z e^{-y A} B \\
& =C e^{-(x+y) A} B-C e^{-x A}\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} e^{-y A} B-\mu C e^{-x A}\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} R_{x} e^{-y A} B \\
& =0 . \tag{2.20}
\end{align*}
$$

(ii) As in (1.5), the operator $\Theta_{x}: L^{2}(0, \infty) \rightarrow H$ is Hilbert-Schmidt; likewise $\Xi_{x}$ : $L^{2}(0, \infty) \rightarrow H$ is Hilbert-Schmidt; so $(-A, B, C)$ is (2,2)-admissible. Hence $\Gamma_{\Phi_{(x)}}=\Theta_{x}^{\dagger} \Xi_{x}$ and $R_{x}=\Xi_{x} \Theta_{x}^{\dagger}$ are trace class, $\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)$ is a holomorphic function of $x$ on some sector $S_{\delta}$ as in Theorem 2.2 and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{det}\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+\mu \Xi_{x} \Theta_{x}^{\dagger}\right)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+\mu \Theta_{x}^{\dagger} \Xi_{x}\right)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+\mu \Gamma_{\Phi_{(x)}}\right) \tag{2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

By the Riesz functional calculus, $\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1}$ is meromorphic for $x$ in some $S_{\delta}$. Correcting a typographic error in [9, p. 324], we rearrange terms and calculate the derivative

$$
\begin{align*}
\mu T_{\mu}(x, x) & =-\mu \operatorname{trace}\left(C e^{-x A}\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} e^{-x A} B\right) \\
& =-\mu \operatorname{trace}\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} e^{-x A} B C e^{-x A} \\
& =\mu \operatorname{trace}\left(\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} \frac{d R_{x}}{d x}\right) \\
& =\frac{d}{d x} \operatorname{trace} \log \left(I+\mu R_{x}\right) . \tag{2.22}
\end{align*}
$$

This identity is proved for $|\mu|<1$ and extends by analytic continuation to the maximal domain of $T_{\mu}(x, x)$.
(iii) Since $A$ commutes with $U(t)$, the domain $\mathcal{D}(A)$ is invariant under $U(t)$, and the multiplications $B \mapsto U(t) B, C \mapsto C U(t)$ and $e^{-x A} \mapsto U(t) e^{-x A} U(t)$ preserve the hypotheses of Theorem 2.2, so $(-A, U(t) B, C U(t))$ is $(2,2)$ admissible. By commutativity, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau(x, t)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+U(t) R_{x} U(t)\right), \tag{2.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

which depends continuously on $(x, t)$.

We refer to $\Sigma(t)=(-A, U(t) B, C U(t))$ as a deformation of $\Sigma$, and analyze particular cases below.

## 3. The Baker-Akhiezer function of an admissible linear system

In this section, we consider the Darboux addition rule for potentials and analyze the transformation $(-A, B, C) \mapsto(-A, B,-C)$ and the effect on the ratios and derivatives of $\tau$ functions. Definition (Baker-Akhiezer function). (i) Let $(-A, B, C)$ be as in Theorem 2.2, and let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Sigma_{\zeta}=\left(-A,(\zeta I+A)(\zeta I-A)^{-1} B, C\right) \quad(\zeta \in \mathbf{C} \cup\{\infty\} \backslash \operatorname{Spec}(A)) \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that $\Sigma_{\zeta}$ defines a $(2,2)$ admissible linear systems for $\zeta$ in an open subset of $\mathbf{C} \cup\{\infty\}$ which includes $\left\{\zeta \in \mathbf{C}:-\zeta \in S_{\theta}\right\}$ for some $\pi / 2<\theta<\pi$. We identify $\Sigma_{\infty}$ with ( $-A, B, C$ ), and $\Sigma_{0}$ with $(-A, B,-C)$.
(ii) Let $\tau_{\zeta}$ be the tau function of $\Sigma_{\zeta}$, and let the Baker-Akhiezer function for the family of linear systems be

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{\zeta}(x)=\frac{\tau_{\zeta}(x)}{\tau_{\infty}(x)} \exp (\zeta x) \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) Let $\tau_{\zeta}^{*}(x)=\overline{\tau_{\bar{\zeta}}(\bar{x})}$ as in Schwarz's reflection principle, and let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Sigma_{\zeta}^{*}=\left(-A^{\dagger}, C^{\dagger}, B^{\dagger}\left(\zeta I+A^{\dagger}\right)\left(\zeta I-A^{\dagger}\right)^{-1}\right) \quad\left(\zeta \in \mathbf{C} \cup\{\infty\} \backslash \operatorname{Spec}\left(A^{\dagger}\right)\right) \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

so $\Sigma_{\zeta} \mapsto \Sigma_{\zeta}^{*}$ is an involution, and $\Sigma_{\zeta}^{*}$ has tau function $\tau^{*}$.
The following result introduces a family of solutions of Schrödinger equation corresponding to the $\Sigma_{\zeta}$ with an addition rule in the style of Darboux.
Proposition 3.1. Let $(-A, B, C)$ be as in Theorem 2.2.
(i) Then for $-\zeta \in S_{\theta}$, the linear system $\Sigma_{\zeta}$ is also (2,2) admissible, and the Baker-Akhiezer function satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \psi_{\zeta}(x)+u_{\infty}(x) \psi_{\zeta}(x)=-\zeta^{2} \psi_{\zeta}(x) \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) There exist $h_{j} \in C^{\infty}((0, \infty)$; $\mathbf{C})$ such that there is an asymptotic expansion

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{\zeta}(x) \asymp e^{\zeta x}\left(1+\frac{h_{1}(x)}{\zeta}+\frac{h_{2}(x)}{\zeta^{2}}+\ldots\right) \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $\zeta \rightarrow \pm i \infty$, and the expansion is uniform for $x$ in compact subsets of $(0, \infty)$.
Proof (i) For all $\zeta \in \mathbf{C} \backslash \operatorname{Spec}(A)$, there exists $x_{0}(\zeta)$ such that $\left\|(\zeta I+A)(\zeta I-A)^{-1} R_{x}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)}<1$ for all $x>x_{0}(\zeta)$, so that $\tau_{\zeta}(x)$ is continuously differentiable and non-zero as a function of $x \in\left(x_{0}(\zeta), \infty\right)$. In particular, suppose that $\Re \zeta<0$, then $-\zeta \in S_{\theta}$ so $\zeta I-A$ is invertible. Using the $R$ function for $\Sigma_{\zeta}$, we write

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\tau_{\zeta}(x)}{\tau_{\infty}(x)} & =\frac{\operatorname{det}\left(I+(\zeta I+A)(\zeta I-A)^{-1} R_{x}\right)}{\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\right)} \\
& =\frac{\operatorname{det}\left(I+(\zeta I-A)^{-1}\left((\zeta I-A) R_{x}+A R_{x}+R_{x} A\right)\right)}{\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\right)} \\
& =\frac{\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}+(\zeta I-A)^{-1}\left(A R_{x}+R_{x} A\right)\right)}{\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\right)} \tag{3.6}
\end{align*}
$$

so that when $A R_{x}+R_{x} A$ has rank one, the perturbing term $(\zeta I-A)^{-1}\left(A R_{x}+R_{x} A\right)$ has rank one; continuing we find

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\tau_{\zeta}(x)}{\tau_{\infty}(x)} & =\operatorname{det}\left(I+(\zeta I-A)^{-1} e^{-x A} B C e^{-x A}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}\right) \\
& =\operatorname{det}\left(I+C e^{-x A}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}(\zeta I-A)^{-1} e^{-x A} B\right) \\
& =1+C e^{-x A}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}(\zeta I-A)^{-1} e^{-x A} B, \tag{3.7}
\end{align*}
$$

since $B: \mathbf{C} \rightarrow H$ and $C: H \rightarrow \mathbf{C}$ have rank one. Hence

$$
\begin{align*}
\psi_{\zeta}(x) & =\frac{\tau_{\zeta}(x)}{\tau_{\infty}(x)} \exp (\zeta x) \\
& =\exp (\zeta x)+C e^{-x A}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}(\zeta I-A)^{-1} e^{-x A} B \exp (\zeta) \\
& =\exp (\zeta x)-\int_{x}^{\infty} C e^{-x A}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1} e^{-y A} B \exp (\zeta y) d y \\
& =\exp (\zeta x)+\int_{x}^{\infty} T(x, y) \exp (\zeta y) d y \tag{3.8}
\end{align*}
$$

Here $T$ satisfies the Gelfand-Levitan equation, and by integrating by parts, we see that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial^{2} T}{\partial x^{2}}-\frac{\partial^{2} T}{\partial y^{2}}=u(x) T(x, y) \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $u(x)=-2 \frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \log \tau(x)$. Then by integrating by parts, we see that $\psi_{\zeta}$ satisfies Schrödinger's equation.

The solutions of the differential equation depend analytically on $\zeta$ at those points where the potential depends analytically on $\zeta$; note that $\zeta \mapsto \tau_{\zeta}(x)$ is holomorphic and non zero for $\left\|R_{x}\right\|<1$ and $-\zeta \in S_{\theta}$. Then we continue the solutions analytically to all $-\zeta$ in the sector $S_{\theta}$, on which $\psi_{\zeta}(x)$ is holomorphic as a function of $\zeta$ for $x>0$.
(ii) Observe that $X_{\theta}=S_{\theta} \cap\left(-S_{\theta}\right)$ contains $i \mathbf{R} \backslash\{0\}$. For $\zeta \in S_{\theta} \cap\left(-S_{\theta}\right)$, by (i) there exist solutions $\psi_{\zeta}(x)$ and $\psi_{-\zeta}(x)$ to (3.3). In particular, $\psi_{i k}$ and $\psi_{-i k}(x)$ are solutions for $k>0$. We integrate by parts repeatedly

$$
\begin{align*}
e^{-x A}(\zeta I-A)^{-1} & =e^{-x A} \int_{0}^{\infty} e^{\zeta s} e^{-s A} d s \\
& =\frac{e^{-x A}}{\zeta}+\frac{A e^{-x A}}{\zeta^{2}}+\ldots+\frac{A^{k-1} e^{-x A}}{\zeta^{k}}+\int_{0}^{\infty} \frac{A^{k} e^{-x A}}{\zeta^{k}} e^{\zeta s} e^{-s A} d s \tag{3.10}
\end{align*}
$$

where the integral converges by the hypothesis of Theorem 2.2. Also, $\left(e^{-z A}\right)$ is an analytic semigroup in the sector $S_{\theta-\pi / 2}$, so $\mathcal{D}\left(A^{j}\right)$ is a dense linear subspace of $H$ for all $j=1,2, \ldots$ and $A^{j} e^{-x A} \in \mathcal{L}(H)$ and by Cauchy's estimates there exists $C>0$ such that $\left\|A^{j} e^{-x A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} \leq$ $C j!/ x^{j}$ for all $x>0$. So we can generate an asymptotic expansion of (3.7) with terms

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{j}(x)=C e^{-x A}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1} A^{j-1} e^{-x A} B \tag{3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is bounded on compact subsets of $(0, \infty)$.

Definition (Darboux transforms). Let $(-A, B, C)$ be an $(2,2)$ admissible linear system with tau function $\tau_{\infty}(x ; \mu)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)$. Define the Darboux transform of $(-A, B, C)$ to be $(-A, B,-C)$ with tau function transform $\tau_{0}(x ; \mu)=\operatorname{det}\left(I-\mu R_{x}\right)$. Let

$$
\begin{align*}
v & =\frac{1}{\mu} \frac{d}{d x} \log \frac{\tau_{\infty}}{\tau_{0}}, \quad w=\frac{1}{\mu} \frac{d}{d x} \log \left(\tau_{0} \tau_{\infty}\right) \\
u_{\infty} & =-\frac{2}{\mu^{2}} \frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \log \tau_{\infty}, \quad u_{0}=-\frac{2}{\mu^{2}} \frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \log \tau_{0} \tag{3.12}
\end{align*}
$$

In the following result, we show how products and quotients of $\tau$ functions can be linked by the Gelfand-Levitan equation for $2 \times 2$ matrices, and satisfy the identities usually associated with Darboux transforms in the theory of integrable systems. Identities such as (3.18) also appear in Appendix A16 of Mehta [54].
Theorem 3.2. Let $(-A, B, C)$ be a (2,2)-admissible linear system with input and output spaces $\mathbf{C}$, and let $\phi(x)=C e^{-x A} B$.
(i) Then there exists $\delta>0$ such that for all $\mu \in \mathbf{C}$ such that $|\mu|<\delta$, the integral equation (2.16) with

$$
\begin{align*}
T(x, y) & =\left[\begin{array}{cc}
W(x, y) & V(x, y) \\
V(x, y) & W(x, y)
\end{array}\right],  \tag{3.13}\\
\Phi(x+y) & =\left[\begin{array}{cc}
0 & \phi(x+y) \\
\phi(x+y) & 0
\end{array}\right] \tag{3.14}
\end{align*}
$$

has a solution such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
W(x, x)=\frac{d}{d x} \frac{1}{2 \mu} \log \left(\tau_{\infty}(x ; \mu) \tau_{0}(x ; \mu)\right) \tag{3.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
V(x, x)=\frac{d}{d x} \frac{1}{2 \mu} \log \frac{\tau_{\infty}(x ; \mu)}{\tau_{0}(x ; \mu)} . \tag{3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{2 \mu} \frac{d}{d x} W(x, x)=-V(x, x)^{2} \tag{3.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) also Toda's equation holds in the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau_{0}^{\prime \prime} \tau_{\infty}-2 \tau_{0}^{\prime} \tau_{\infty}^{\prime}+\tau_{0} \tau_{\infty}^{\prime \prime}=0 \tag{3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. (i) Let

$$
\begin{gather*}
T_{\infty}(x, y)=-C e^{-x A}\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} e^{-y A} B  \tag{3.19}\\
T_{0}(x, y)=C e^{-x A}\left(I-\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} e^{-y A} B \tag{3.20}
\end{gather*}
$$

and

$$
\Phi(x)=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
0 & \phi(x)  \tag{3.21}\\
\phi(x) & 0
\end{array}\right] .
$$

Now let

$$
T(x, y)=\frac{1}{2}\left[\begin{array}{ll}
T_{\infty}+T_{0} & T_{\infty}-T_{0}  \tag{3.22}\\
T_{\infty}-T_{0} & T_{\infty}+T_{0}
\end{array}\right]
$$

so that

$$
T(x, y)=-\left[\begin{array}{cc}
C & 0  \tag{3.23}\\
0 & C
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
e^{-x A} & 0 \\
0 & e^{-x A}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
I & \mu R_{x} \\
\mu R_{x} & I
\end{array}\right]^{-1}\left[\begin{array}{cc}
e^{-y A} & 0 \\
0 & e^{-y A}
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
0 & B \\
B & 0
\end{array}\right]
$$

hence $T$ satisfies the Gelfand-Levitan equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
T(x, y)+\Phi(x+y)+\mu \int_{x}^{\infty} T(x, z) \Phi(z, y) d z=0 \tag{3.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

ii) As in Proposition 2.4,

$$
\begin{align*}
T_{\infty}(x, x) & =\frac{1}{\mu} \frac{d}{d x} \log \tau_{\infty}(x)  \tag{3.25}\\
T_{0}(x, x) & =\frac{1}{\mu} \frac{d}{d x} \log \tau_{0}(x) \tag{3.26}
\end{align*}
$$

hence (3.18) is equivalent to the condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d x} T_{0}(x, x)+\mu\left(T_{0}(x, x)-T_{\infty}(x, x)\right)^{2}+\frac{d}{d x} T_{\infty}(x, x)=0 \tag{3.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

which we now verify. The left-hand side equals

$$
\begin{aligned}
& C e^{-x A}\left(-A\left(I-\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1}-\left(I-\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} \mu\left(A R_{x}+R_{x} A\right)\left(I-\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1}-\left(I-\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} A\right) e^{-x A} B \\
& +C e^{-x A}\left(\left(I-\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1}+\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1}\right) e^{-x A} \mu B C e^{-x A}\left(\left(I-\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1}+\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1}\right) e^{-x A} B
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
+C e^{-x A}\left(A\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1}-\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} \mu\left(A R_{x}+R_{x} A\right)\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1}+\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} A\right) e^{-x A} B \tag{3.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

All of the terms begin with $C e^{-x A}$ and end with $e^{-x A} B$, and we can replace $e^{-x A} \mu B C e^{-x A}$ by $\mu\left(A R_{x}+R_{x} A\right)$ to obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
(3.28)= & C e^{-x A}\left(-2\left(I-\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} A\left(I-\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1}+4\left(I-\mu^{2} R_{x}^{2}\right)^{-1} \mu\left(A R_{x}+R_{x} A\right)\left(I-\mu^{2} R_{x}^{2}\right)^{-1}\right. \\
& \left.\quad+2\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1} A\left(I+\mu R_{x}\right)^{-1}\right) e^{-x A} B \\
= & 0 \tag{3.29}
\end{align*}
$$

This proves (3.18), and one can easily check that (3.18) is equivalent to

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{0}(x)=\frac{1}{\mu} \frac{d v}{d x}+v(x)^{2}, \quad v(x)^{2}=-\frac{1}{\mu} \frac{d w}{d x} \tag{3.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

The entries of $T$ satisfy the pair of coupled integral equations

$$
\begin{align*}
& 0=W(x, y)+\mu \int_{x}^{\infty} V(x, s) \phi(s+y) d s \\
& 0=V(x, y)+\phi(x+y)+\mu \int_{x}^{\infty} W(x, s) \phi(s+y) d s \tag{3.31}
\end{align*}
$$

so $W$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
0=-W(x, z)+\mu \int_{x}^{\infty} \phi(x+y) \phi(y+z) d y+\mu^{2} \int_{x}^{\infty} W(x, s) \int_{x}^{\infty} \phi(s+y) \phi(y+z) d y d s \tag{3.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

which explains how $\mu^{2} \Gamma_{\phi}^{2}$ enters the discussion in several determinant formulas [67].

Definition (i) (Darboux Addition). For $-\zeta \in S_{\theta} \cup\{0\}$ we define the Darboux addition rule on $(2,2)$ admissible linear systems by $M_{\zeta}:(-A, B, C) \mapsto\left(-A,(\zeta I+A)(\zeta I-A)^{-1} B, C\right)$ and on potentials by

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{\infty} \mapsto u_{\zeta}=u_{\infty}-2\left(\log \psi_{\zeta}\right)^{\prime \prime} \tag{3.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) Let $\operatorname{Wr}(\varphi, \psi)$ be the Wronskian of $\psi, \varphi \in C^{1}((0, \infty) ; \mathbf{C})$.

Corollary 3.3. The set $\left\{M_{\zeta},\left(\zeta \in X_{\theta}\right), M_{0}, M_{\infty}=I\right\}$ generates a group such that $M_{0}^{2}=I$, $M_{\zeta} M_{-\zeta}=I$ and $M_{\zeta} M_{\eta}$ corresponds to adding $-2 \frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \log \operatorname{Wr}\left(\psi_{\zeta}, \psi_{\eta}\right)$ to the potential.
Proof. The definition is consistent with [22, p 484], and p. 414 of [47]. In particular, $\psi_{0}(x)=\tau_{0}(x) / \tau_{\infty}(x)$, and $u_{0}(x)=u_{\infty}(x)-2 \frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \log \psi_{0}(x)$, which is consistent with (3.18).

For $\zeta_{1} \neq \zeta_{2}$, let $\Psi(x)=W r\left(\psi_{\zeta_{1}}, \psi_{\zeta_{2}}\right) / \psi_{\zeta_{2}}$, and observe that

$$
\Psi^{\prime \prime}=\left(\zeta_{2}^{2}+u_{\infty}-2\left(\log \psi_{\zeta_{1}}\right)^{\prime \prime}\right) \Psi
$$

This gives the basic composition rule for $M_{\zeta_{2}} M_{\zeta_{1}}$. The other statements follow from Proposition 3.1 and Theorem 3.2.

Definition (i) Let $\Omega$ be a domain in $\mathbf{C}$. A divisor $\delta$ on $\Omega$ is a function $\delta: \Omega \rightarrow \mathbf{Z}$ such that the restriction of $\delta$ to $K$ has finite support for all compact subsets $K$ of $\Omega$.
(ii) For a meromorphic function $f$ on $\Omega$, we let $\nu(z)$ be the order of $z$ as a zero of $f$, and $\nu(p)$ be the order of $p$ as a pole. Then $(f)=\sum_{z} \nu(z) \delta_{z}-\sum_{p} \nu(p) \delta_{p}$ defines the principal divisor corresponding to $f$; see [65].
(iii) Let $\log _{+} x=\max \{0, \log x\}$ for $x>0$. For any meromorphic function $f$ let

$$
\begin{equation*}
m(r ; f)=\int_{0}^{2 \pi} \log _{+}\left|f\left(r e^{i \theta}\right)\right| \frac{d \theta}{2 \pi} \quad(r>0) \tag{3.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition 3.4. Suppose that $\phi:(0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$ arises from a $(2,2)$ admissible linear system. Let $\tau_{\infty}(x ; \mu)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+\mu \Gamma_{\phi_{(x)}}\right)$, and $\tau_{0}(x ; \mu)=\tau_{\infty}(x ;-\mu)$ for all $x>0$ and $\mu \in \mathbf{C}$.
(i) Then $\mu \mapsto \tau_{\infty}(x ; \mu)$ is entire, and $\overline{\tau_{\infty}(x ; \bar{\mu})}=\tau_{\infty}(x ; \mu)$ for all $x>0$.
(ii) Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
q(\mu)=\frac{\tau_{\infty}(0 ; \mu)}{\tau_{0}(0 ; \mu)} \tag{3.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

- Then $q$ is meromorphic, $q^{*}(\mu)=q(\mu)$ and $q(\mu) q(-\mu)=1$;
- all the zeros and poles of $q$ are simple and lie in $\mathbf{R} \backslash\{0\}$;
- the zeros $\left(z_{j}\right)$ of $q$ satisfy $\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} 1 /\left|z_{j}\right|<\infty$, and
- $m(r ; q) / r \rightarrow 0$ as $r \rightarrow \infty$.
(iii) Conversely, let $q$ satisfy the conclusions of (ii). Then there exists a balanced linear system $(-A, B, C)$ with input and output space $\mathbf{C}$, such that $q(\mu)=\kappa \tau_{\infty}(0 ; \mu) / \tau_{0}(0 ; \mu)$ for some constant $\kappa$.

Proof. (i) This follows from Theorem 2.2 (ii).
(ii) Since $\Gamma_{\phi}$ is self-adjoint and trace class, the spectrum consists of 0 , together with nonzero real eigenvalues $\lambda_{j}$ with multiplicity $\nu\left(\left\{\lambda_{j}\right\}\right)$, and for a self-adjoint $\Gamma_{\phi}$ the algebraic and geometric multiplicity are equal. For a Hankel operator $\Gamma_{\phi}$, the dimension of $\{\xi: \Gamma \xi=0\}$ is either zero or infinity; so by compressing $\Gamma_{\phi}$ to the closure of its range, we can assume 0 is not an eigenvalue. Then the function $q(\mu)=\tau_{\infty}(\mu) / \tau_{0}(\mu)$ is meromorphic on $\mathbf{C}$, the identity $q(\mu) q(-\mu)=1$ is trivially true, while $q=q^{*}$ holds by (i).

The formal difference of the zeros and poles of $q$ on $\{\mu \in \mathbf{C}:|\mu|<\rho\}$ may be represented by the divisor

$$
\begin{align*}
(q) & =\sum_{j:\left|1 / \lambda_{j}\right|<\rho}\left(\nu\left(\left\{\lambda_{j}\right\}\right) \delta_{-1 / \lambda_{j}}-\nu\left(\left\{\lambda_{j}\right\}\right) \delta_{1 / \lambda_{j}}\right) \\
& =\sum_{j: \lambda_{j} \rho>1}\left(\nu\left(\lambda_{j}\right)-\nu\left(-\lambda_{j}\right)\right)\left(\delta_{-1 / \lambda_{j}}-\delta_{1 / \lambda_{j}}\right), \tag{3.36}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\nu\left(\left\{\lambda_{j}\right\}\right)-\nu\left(\left\{-\lambda_{j}\right\}\right)$ belongs to $\{-1,0,1\}$ by a theorem of Megretskii, Peller and Treil [53]. Consider $\lambda>0$. If $\nu(\lambda)-\nu(-\lambda)=-1$, then $q$ has a simple zero at $-1 / \lambda$ and a simple pole at $1 / \lambda$; whereas if $\nu(\lambda)-\nu(-\lambda)=1$, then $q$ has a simple zero at $1 / \lambda$ and a simple pole at $-1 / \lambda$.

Also $\sum_{j=1}^{\infty}\left|\lambda_{j}\right|$ converges since $\Gamma_{\phi}$ is trace class, so $\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} 1 /\left|z_{j}\right|$ converges. Finally, standard results on convergent infinite products from [31', Theorem 1.9] show that $m(r ; q) / r \rightarrow 0$ as $r \rightarrow \infty$.
(iii) Suppose conversely that $q$ satisfies the conclusions of (ii). Now $q(0)^{2}=1$ so 0 is neither a zero nor a pole of $q$; also $z$ is a zero of $q$ if and only if $p=-z$ is a pole of $q$, so the divisor of $q$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
(q)=\sum_{z} \delta_{z}-\delta_{-z} \tag{3.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have summed over the set of zeros $z$ of $q$. Now $z \in \mathbf{R} \backslash\{0\}$ for all the zeros, and the $z$ have no point of accumulation on $\mathbf{R}$ since $q$ is meromorphic, so we can list the zeros in a (possibly finite) sequence $\left(z_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{\infty}$ such that $\left(\left|z_{j}\right|\right)_{j=1}^{\infty}$ is strictly increasing. By hypothesis $\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} 1 /\left|z_{j}\right|$ converges.

Let $\lambda_{j}=-1 / z_{j}$ and define $\nu: \mathbf{R} \rightarrow \mathbf{Z}$ by $\nu\left(\lambda_{j}\right)=1$ for $j=1,2, \ldots$, and $\nu(\lambda)=0$ otherwise. Then there exists a self-adjoint Hankel operator $\Gamma$ on $L^{2}((0, \infty) ; \mathbf{C})$ with spectral multiplicity function $\nu$ and spectrum $\left\{\lambda_{j}: j=1,2, \ldots\right\} \cup\{0\}$. Since $\sum_{j=1}^{\infty}\left|\lambda_{j}\right|$ converges, $\Gamma$ is trace class and has a Fredholm determinant, so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\operatorname{det}(I+\mu \Gamma)}{\operatorname{det}(I-\mu \Gamma)}=\prod_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{1-\mu / z_{j}}{1+\mu / z_{j}} \tag{3.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

is meromorphic with only simple zeros at $z_{j}$ and simple poles at $-z_{j}$. Hence the product in (3.38) has the same divisor as $f$, and we deduce that there exists an entire function $f$ such that $q(\mu) e^{-f(\mu)}$ equals the product in (3.38). The next step is to eliminate this $f$ by using elementary Nevanlinna theory.

Let $n(r)=\sharp\left\{z_{j}:\left|z_{j}\right| \leq r\right\}$ be the counting function for zeros, or equivalently poles of $q$, and then let $N(r ; q)=\int_{0}^{r} n(s) s^{-1} d s$. By standard results, we have convergent expressions

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\left|z_{j}\right|}=\int_{0}^{\infty} \frac{n(r) d r}{r^{2}} \tag{3.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

from which we deduce that $n(r) / r \rightarrow 0$ and $N(r ; q) / r \rightarrow 0$ as $r \rightarrow \infty$; so the Nevanlinna characteristic satisfies $N(r ; q)+m(r ; q)=o(r)$ as $r \rightarrow \infty$. By [31', Theorem 1.9], we deduce that $f(\mu)$ is a polynomial of degee zero, namely a constant.

By Theorem 1.1 of [53], $\Gamma$ may be realized by a balanced linear system $(-A, B, C)$ with input and output space $\mathbf{C}$, where $A \in \mathcal{L}(H)$ bounded, and $\Gamma=\Gamma_{\phi}$ as in (1.1), where $\phi(t)=$ $C e^{-t A} B$.

We now show how a Schrödinger differential equation of scattering type gives rise to an admissible linear system as in Theorem 3.2; this justifies the terminology 'scattering function' as applied to $\phi$. In section 4 of [9], we realized the scattering data from Schrödinger's equation from a linear system with unbounded $A$; in the following result, we realize the data with a
linear system with $A \in \mathcal{L}(H)$.The differential equation $-f^{\prime \prime}+\left(v^{\prime}+v^{2}\right) f=k^{2} f$ may be written as

$$
\frac{d}{d x}\left[\begin{array}{l}
f  \tag{3.40}\\
g
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
v & i k \\
i k & -v
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{l}
f \\
g
\end{array}\right]
$$

where we suppose that $v \in C_{c}^{\infty}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{R})$ for simplicity. For $\lambda=k^{2}>0$, there exists a solution $f(x)=\psi(x ; k)$ such that

$$
\psi(x ; k) \asymp \begin{cases}e^{-i k x}+s_{21}(k) e^{i k x}, & \text { as } x \rightarrow \infty  \tag{3.41}\\ \bar{s}_{11}(k) e^{-i k x}, & \text { as } x \rightarrow-\infty\end{cases}
$$

There may also be a discrete spectrum $\lambda_{j}=-\kappa_{j}^{2}$ with $\kappa_{n} \geq \ldots \geq \kappa_{1}>0$, where each $\kappa_{j}^{2}$ is associated to a real eigenfunction $\psi\left(x ;-\kappa_{j}^{2}\right)$ called a bound state that is asymptotic to $c\left(-\kappa_{j}^{2}\right) e^{-\kappa_{j} x}$ as $x \rightarrow \infty$, where $c\left(-\kappa_{j}^{2}\right)$ is normalized by taking $\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \psi\left(x ;-\kappa_{j}^{2}\right)^{2} d x=1$. The discrete spectrum gives rise to a linear system with finite dimensional state space, as we discuss in Proposition 4.5. Note that $-\kappa_{j}-\kappa_{\ell}<0$ for all $j, \ell$.

So we suppose for the moment that the discrete spectrum is absent, and the inverse spectral problem is to recover $v$ from $s_{21}(k)$ and $s_{11}(k)$, up to equivalence. We aim to introduce an admissible linear system from the spectral data and determine the potential.

As in [22], the scattering matrix is

$$
S(k)=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
s_{11}(k) & -\bar{s}_{21}(k)  \tag{3.42}\\
s_{21}(k) & \bar{s}_{11}(k)
\end{array}\right] \in S U(2)
$$

where $s_{21}(k)$ is called the reflection coefficient and $s_{11}(k)$ is the transmission coefficient for $k \in \mathbf{R}$. We suppose that $s_{21}(-k)=\overline{s_{21}(k)}$, and that $s_{21} \in L^{2}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{C})$ is absolutely continuous with $s_{21}^{\prime} \in L^{2}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{C})$. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{n}=\frac{(-1)^{n}}{2 \pi} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} s_{21}(k) \frac{(1 / 2+i k)^{n}}{(1 / 2-i k)^{n+1}} d k \tag{3.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition 3.5. Suppose that (3.41) has no bound states, and suppose that $\left(a_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim \sup _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left|a_{n}\right|^{1 / n}<1 / 3 \tag{3.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then there exists a $(2,2)$ admissible linear system $(-A, B, C)$ with $H_{0}=\mathbf{C}$ and bounded $A, B, C$ such that the potential $u_{0}=v^{\prime}+v^{2}$ of $-f^{\prime \prime}+u_{0} f=\lambda f$ is determined by the $\tau$ function of $(-A, B,-C)$.
Proof. We introduce the scattering function

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi(x)=\frac{1}{2 \pi} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} s_{21}(k) e^{i x k} d k \quad(x>0) \tag{3.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that $\phi \in L^{2}((0, \infty) ; \mathbf{R})$ and $x \phi(x) \in L^{2}((0, \infty) ; \mathbf{R})$; hence $\Gamma_{\phi}$ determines a self-adjoint and Hilbert-Schmidt operator on $L^{2}((0, \infty) ; \mathbf{C})$. We now introduce a linear system which realizes this $\phi$.

Let $L_{n}(x)=e^{x}(d / d x)^{n}\left(x^{n} e^{-x}\right) / n$ ! be the Laguerre polynomial of order zero and degree $n$; then the $n^{\text {th }}$ Laguerre function is

$$
\begin{equation*}
e^{-x / 2} L_{n}(x)=\frac{1}{2 \pi i} \int_{C(1, \delta)} e^{-x z / 2} \frac{(1+z)^{n}}{(1-z)^{n}} \frac{d z}{1-z}, \tag{3.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C(1, \delta)$ is the circle of centre 1 and radius $0<\delta<1$ in $\mathbf{C}$. This is a special case of a formula of Tricomi, and follows from Cauchy's integral formula. Then $\left(e^{-x / 2} L_{n}(x)\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ gives an orthonormal basis for $L^{2}(0, \infty)$. By Plancherel's formula we find that

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{n}=\int_{0}^{\infty} \phi(x) e^{-x / 2} L_{n}(x) d x \quad(n=0,1,2, \ldots) \tag{3.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

are the coefficients of $\phi$ with respect to $\left(e^{-x / 2} L_{n}(x)\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ and we introduce

$$
\begin{equation*}
b(z)=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_{n} \frac{(1+z)^{n}}{(1-z)^{n}} \quad(z \in C(1, \delta)) \tag{3.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

by the hypothesis, $\lim \sup _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left|a_{n}\right|^{1 / n}=\rho<1 / 3$ so the series for $b(z)$ converges for all $z \in \mathbf{C}$ outside of the disc $D\left(\left(1+\rho^{2}\right) /\left(1-\rho^{2}\right) ; 2 \rho /\left(1-\rho^{2}\right)\right)$. Hence can choose $0<\delta<1$ so $(2+\delta) \limsup \operatorname{sum}_{n \rightarrow \infty}\left|a_{n}\right|^{1 / n} / \delta<1$ so that this series converges absolutely and uniformly on $C(1, \delta)$.

We parametrize $C(1, \delta)$ by $z=1+\delta e^{i \theta}$ for $\theta \in[0,2 \pi]$, and introduce the Hilbert space $H=L^{2}(C(1, \delta) ; d \theta ; \mathbf{C})$. Then we introduce bounded linear operators

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
A: H \rightarrow H: & f(z) \mapsto z f(z) / 2 \\
B: \mathbf{C} \rightarrow H: & \beta \mapsto \beta b(z) \\
C: H \rightarrow \mathbf{C}: & g \mapsto \frac{1}{2 \pi i} \int_{C(1, \delta)} g(z) \frac{d z}{1-z} \tag{3.49}
\end{array}
$$

Thus $(-A, B, C)$ gives a linear system with state space $H$, input and output space $\mathbf{C}$.
From the orthogonal series expansion $\phi(t)=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_{n} e^{-t / 2} L_{n}(t)$, we note that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi(t)=\frac{1}{2 \pi i} \int_{C(1, \delta)} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{a_{n}(1+z)^{n} e^{-z t / 2} d z}{(1-z)^{n+1}}=C e^{-t A} B \tag{3.50}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also, the corresponding $R$ operator has integral kernel

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{x}=\int_{x}^{\infty} e^{-t A} B C e^{-t A} d t \leftrightarrow \frac{e^{-x z / 2-x w / 2} b(z)}{z+w} \tag{3.51}
\end{equation*}
$$

We observe that $\Re z \geq 1-\delta$ for all $z$ on $C(1, \delta)$; hence $\left\|e^{-t A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} \leq e^{-t(1-\delta) / 2}$; so $(-A, B, C)$ is $(2,2)$ admissible by Theorem 2.2(i).

For all $\phi \in L^{2}((0, \infty) ; \mathbf{R})$ we have $\left(a_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty} \in \ell^{2}$ and hence $b(i y) /(1-i y)$ gives a function in $L^{2}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{C})$. Hence by deforming (3.48) to an integral along the imaginary axis $\Re z=0$, we can obtain an $L^{2}$ Plancherel integral

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi(t)=\frac{1}{2 \pi} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-i t y} \frac{b(i y) d y}{1-i y} \tag{3.52}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, the operation of multiplication by $i y$ is clearly unbounded on this deformed contour.
We now recover $u$ from $(-A, B, C)$ via the Gelfand-Levitan equation. The kernel

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{0}(x, y)=C e^{-x A}\left(I-R_{x}\right)^{-1} e^{-y A} B \quad\left(x_{0}<x<y\right) \tag{3.53}
\end{equation*}
$$

as in (2.17) gives the unique solution of the integral equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
-T_{0}(x, y)+\phi(x+y)+\int_{x}^{\infty} T_{0}(x, y) \phi(y+z) d z=0 \quad\left(x_{0}<x<y\right) \tag{3.54}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some $x_{0}>0$. Then one checks that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial^{2} T_{0}}{\partial x^{2}}-\frac{\partial^{2} T_{0}}{\partial y^{2}}-q(x) T_{0}(x, y)=0 \tag{3.55}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $q(x)=-2(d / d x) T_{0}(x, x)$. Also, one has $T_{0}(x, x)=(d / d x) \log \operatorname{det}\left(I-R_{x}\right)$, so $q(x)=$ $-2\left(d^{2} / d x^{2}\right) \log \tau(x)$. Given this partial equation for $T_{0}(x, y)$ one can check that

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(x ; k)=e^{i k x}+\int_{x}^{\infty} e^{i k y} T_{0}(x, y) d y \tag{3.56}
\end{equation*}
$$

satisfies $-f^{\prime \prime}(x ; k)+q(x) f(x ; k)=k^{2} f(x ; k)$. Hence we can identify $q(x)$ with $u_{0}(x)=v^{\prime}(x)+$ $v(x)^{2}$, and thus obtain a solution of the inverse spectral problem.

## 4 The state ring associated with an admissible linear system

Gelfand and Dikii [26] considered the algebra $\mathcal{A}_{u}=\mathbf{C}\left[u, u^{\prime}, u^{\prime \prime}, \ldots\right]$ of complex polynomials in a smooth potential $u$ and its derivatives. They showed that if $u$ satisfies the stationary higher order $K d V$ equations (5.1), then $\mathcal{A}_{u}$ is a Noetherian ring [6] and the associated Schrödinger equation is integrable by quadratures; see [14, 63]. In this section, we introduce an analogue $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}$ for an admissible linear system. In the subsequent section, we link this to the result from [26].

We introduce these state rings in this section, and develop a calculus for $R_{x}$ which is the counterpart of Pöppe's functional calculus for Hankel operators from [61, 62]. As we see in subsequent sections, our theory of state rings has wider scope for generalization.
Definition (Differential rings). (i) Let $\mathcal{R}$ be a ring with ideal $\mathcal{J}$, and let $\partial: \mathcal{R} \rightarrow \mathcal{R}$ be a derivation. Then $\mathcal{R}_{\mathcal{J}}=\{r \in \mathcal{R}: \partial(r) \in \mathcal{J}\}$ gives a subring of $\mathcal{R}$, the ring of constants relative to $\mathcal{J}$. When $\mathcal{R}$ is an algebra over $\mathbf{C}$ and $\mathcal{J}=0$, we call $\mathcal{R}_{0}$ the constants; see [63].
(ii) Let $H$ and $H_{0}$ be separable complex Hilbert spaces, let $\mathcal{L}(H)$ be the ring of bounded linear operators on $H$. Let $\mathcal{S}$ be a subring of $C^{\infty}((0, \infty) ; \mathcal{L}(H))$ and $\mathcal{B}$ be a subring of $C^{\infty}\left((0, \infty) ; \mathcal{L}\left(H_{0}\right)\right)$; that is we suppose that each $T \in \mathcal{S}$ is a differentiable function of $x \in(0, \infty)$ as we indicate by writing $T_{x}$; we suppose further that $d T_{x} / d x \in \mathcal{S}$, and that $(d / d x)(S T)=$ $(d S / d x) T+S(d T / d x)$. Then $\mathcal{S}$ is a differential ring. When $I \in \mathcal{S}$ and $\theta \in \mathbf{C}$, we identify $\theta I$ with $\theta$ to simplify notation.
Definition (State ring of a linear system). Let $(-A, B, C)$ be a linear system such that $A \in \mathcal{L}(H)$. Suppose that:
(i) $\mathcal{S}$ is a differential subring of $C^{\infty}((0, \infty) ; \mathcal{L}(H))$;
(ii) $I, A$ and $B C$ are constant elements of $\mathcal{S}$;
(iii) $e^{-x A}, R_{x}$ and $F_{x}=\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}$ belong to $\mathcal{S}$.

Then $\mathcal{S}$ is a state ring for $(-A, B, C)$.
Lemma 4.1. Suppose that $(-A, B, C)$ is a linear system with bounded $A$ and that $R_{x}$ gives a solution of Lyapunov's equation (1.3) such that $I+R_{x}$ is invertible for $x>0$ with inverse $F_{x}$.

Then the free associative algebra $\mathcal{S}$ generated by $I, R_{0}, A, F_{0}, e^{-x A}, R_{x}$ and $F_{x}$ is a state ring for $(-A, B, C)$ on $(0, \infty)$. For all $t>0$, there exists a ring homomorphism $S_{t}: \mathcal{S} \rightarrow \mathcal{S}$ given by $S_{t}: G(x) \mapsto G(x+t)$ such that $S_{t}$ commutes with $d / d x$
Proof. We can regard $\mathcal{S}$ as a subring of $\left.C_{b}((0, \infty), \mathcal{L}(H))\right)$, so the multiplication is well defined. Then we note that $B C=A R_{0}+R_{0} A$ belongs to $\mathcal{S}$, as required. We also note that $(d / d x) e^{-x A}=-A e^{-x A}$ and that Lyapunov's equation (1.3) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d x}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}=\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}\left(A R_{x}+R_{x} A\right)\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1} \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d F_{x}}{d x}=A F_{x}+F_{x} A-2 F_{x} A F_{x} \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

with the initial condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
A F_{0}+F_{0} A-2 F_{0} A F_{0}=F_{0} B C F_{0} \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence $\mathcal{S}$ is a differential ring.
We can map $I \mapsto I, e^{-x A} \mapsto e^{-(x+t) A}, R_{0} \mapsto e^{-t A} R_{0} e^{-t A}, R_{x} \mapsto e^{-t A} R_{x} e^{-t A}$ and $F_{x} \mapsto\left(I+e^{-t A} R_{x} e^{-t A}\right)^{-1}$, and thus produce a ring homomorphism $G(x) \mapsto G(x+t)$ which satisfies $(d / d x) S_{t} G(x)=G^{\prime}(x+t)=S_{t}(d / d x) G(x)$.

Definition (Products and brackets). (i) Given a state ring $\mathcal{S}$ for $(-A, B, C)$, and let $\mathcal{B}$ be any differential ring of functions from $(0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{L}\left(H_{0}\right)$. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbf{C}}\left\{A^{n_{1}}, A^{n_{1}} F_{x} A^{n_{2}} \ldots F_{x} A^{n_{r}}: n_{j} \in \mathbf{N}\right\} . \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) On $\mathcal{S}$ we introduce the associative product $*$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
P * Q=P(A F+F A-2 F A F) Q \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is distributive over the standard addition, and the derivation $\partial: \mathcal{S} \rightarrow \mathcal{S}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial P=A(I-2 F) P+\frac{d P}{d x}+P(I-2 F) A \tag{4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) Let $\lfloor\cdot\rfloor: \mathcal{S} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}$ be the linear map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lfloor Y\rfloor=C e^{-x A} F_{x} Y F_{x} e^{-x A} B \quad(Y \in \mathbf{S}) \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that $x \mapsto\lfloor Y\rfloor$ is a function $\left(x_{0}, x_{1}\right) \rightarrow \mathcal{L}\left(H_{0}\right)$.
Proposition 4.2. Then $\left(\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}, *, \partial\right)$ is a differential ring, and there is a homomorphism of differential rings $\left(\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}, *, \partial\right) \rightarrow(\mathcal{B}, \cdot, d / d x)$ given by $P \mapsto\lfloor P\rfloor$.
Proof. The basic observation is that $d F / d x=A F+F A-2 F A F$, so one can check that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial(P * Q)=(\partial P) * Q+P *(\partial Q) \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

hence $(\mathcal{S}, *, \partial)$ is a differential ring.
We can multiply elements in $\mathcal{S}$ by concatenating words and taking linear combinations. Since all words in $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}$ begin and end with $A$, we obtain words of the required form, hence $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}$ is a subring. To differentiate a word in $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}$ we add words in which we successively replace each $F_{x}$ by $A F_{x}+F_{x} A-2 F_{x} A F_{x}$, giving a linear combination of words of the required form.

From the definition of $R_{x}$, we have $A R_{x}+R_{x} A=e^{-x A} B C e^{-x A}$, and hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{x} e^{-x A} B C e^{-x A} F_{x}=A F_{x}+F_{x} A-2 F_{x} A F_{x} \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{align*}
\lfloor P\rfloor\lfloor Q\rfloor & =C e^{-x A} F_{x} P F_{x} e^{-x A} B C e^{-x A} F_{x} Q F_{x} e^{-x A} B \\
& =C e^{-x A} F_{x} P\left(A F_{x}+F_{x} A-2 F_{x} A F_{x}\right) Q F_{x} e^{-x A} B \\
& =\left\lfloor P\left(A F_{x}+F_{x} A-2 F_{x} A F_{x}\right) Q\right\rfloor \\
& =\lfloor P * Q\rfloor . \tag{4.10}
\end{align*}
$$

Moreover, the first and last terms in $\lfloor P\rfloor$ have derivatives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d x} C e^{-x A} F_{x}=C e^{-x A} F_{x} A\left(I-2 F_{x}\right), \quad \frac{d}{d x} F_{x} e^{-x A} B=\left(I-2 F_{x}\right) A F_{x} e^{-x A} B \tag{4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies (3.7).
The bracket operation satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d x}\lfloor P\rfloor=\left\lfloor A\left(I-2 F_{x}\right) P+\frac{d P}{d x}+P\left(I-2 F_{x}\right) A\right\rfloor=\lfloor\partial P\rfloor \tag{4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $x_{0} \geq 0$ and $0<\phi<\pi$, let $S_{\delta}^{x_{0}}$ be the translated sector $S_{\delta}^{x_{0}}=\left\{z=x_{0}+w: w \in\right.$ $\mathbf{C} \backslash\{0\} ;|\arg w|<\delta\}$ and let $H^{\infty}\left(S_{\delta}^{x_{0}}\right)$ the the bounded holomorphic complex functions on
$S_{\delta}^{x_{0}}$. Then let $H_{\infty}^{\infty}=\cup_{x_{0}>0} H^{\infty}\left(S_{\delta}^{x_{0}}\right)$ be the algebra of complex functions which are bounded on some translated sector $S_{\delta}^{x_{0}}$, with the usual pointwise multiplication.
Theorem 4.3. Let $(-A, B, C)$ be a (2,2)-admissible linear system with $H_{0}=\mathbf{C}$ as in Theorem 2.2, so $\left(e^{-z A}\right)$ for $z \in S_{\phi}^{0}$ is a bounded holomorphic semigroup on $H$. Let $\Theta_{0}=\left\{P \in \mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}\right.$ : $\lfloor P\rfloor=0\}$.
(i) Then $\left(\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}, *, \partial\right)$ is a differential ring with bracket $\lfloor\cdot\rfloor$;
(ii) there is a homomorphism of differential rings $\lfloor\cdot\rfloor:\left(\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}, *, \partial\right) \rightarrow\left(H_{\infty}^{\infty}, \cdot, d / d z\right)$;
(iii) $\Theta_{0}$ is a differential ideal in $\left(\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}, *, \partial\right)$ such that $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma} / \Theta_{0}$ is a commutative differential ring, and an integral domain.
Proof (i) In this case $A$ is possibly unbounded as an operator, so we use the holomorphic semigroup to ensure that products and brackets are well defined. We observe that $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}$ has a grading $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}=\oplus_{n=1}^{\infty} A_{n}$, where $A_{n}$ is the span of the elements that have total degree $n$ when viewed as products of $A$ and $F$. For $X_{n} \in A_{n}$ and $Y_{m} \in A_{m}$, we have $X_{n} * Y_{m} \in$ $A_{n+m+2} \oplus A_{n+m+3}$ and $\partial X_{n} \in A_{n+1} \oplus A_{n+2}$.

Also we have $A^{k} e^{-z A} \in \mathcal{L}(H)$ for all $z \in S_{\phi}^{0}$ and $\left\|A^{k} e^{-z A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} \rightarrow 0$ as $z \rightarrow \infty$ in $S_{\phi}^{0}$; hence $R_{z} A^{k} \rightarrow 0$ and $A^{k} R_{z} \rightarrow 0$ in $\mathcal{L}(H)$ as $z \rightarrow \infty$ in $S_{\phi}^{0}$. Hence there exists an increasing positive sequence $\left(x_{k}\right)_{k=0}^{\infty}$ such that $A^{k} F_{z}-A^{k} \in \mathcal{L}(H)$ for all $z \in S_{\phi}^{x_{k}}$ and $A^{k} F_{z}-A^{k} \rightarrow 0$ in $\mathcal{L}(H)$ as $z \rightarrow \infty$ in $S_{\phi}^{x_{k}}$. Let $X_{n} \in A_{n}$ and consider a typical summand $A F_{z} A^{k} F_{z} \ldots A$ in $X_{n}$; we replace each factor like $A^{k} F_{z}$ by the sum of $A^{k}\left(F_{z}-I\right)$ and $A^{k}$ where $k \leq n$; then we observe that there in an initial factor $C e^{-z A}$ and a final factor $e^{-z A} B$ in $\left\lfloor X_{n}\right\rfloor$; hence $\left\lfloor X_{n}\right\rfloor$ determines an element of $H^{\infty}\left(S_{\phi}^{x_{n}}\right)$.
(ii) We can identify $H_{\infty}^{\infty}$ with the algebraic direct limit $H_{\infty}^{\infty}=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} H^{\infty}\left(S_{\phi}^{x_{0}+n}\right)$. By the principle of isolated zeros, the multiplication on $H_{\infty}^{\infty}$ is consistently defined, and $H_{\infty}^{\infty}$ is an integral domain. Now each $f \in H_{\infty}^{\infty}$ gives $f \in H^{\infty}\left(S_{\phi}^{x_{0}}\right)$ so $f^{\prime} \in H^{\infty}\left(S_{\phi}^{x_{0}+1}\right)$ by Cauchy's estimates, so $f^{\prime} \in H^{\infty}-\infty$. From (i) we deduce that $\lfloor\cdot\rfloor: \oplus_{n=1}^{\infty} A_{n} \rightarrow \cup_{n=1}^{\infty} H^{\infty}\left(S_{\phi}^{x_{n}}\right)$ is well-defined and the bracket is multiplicative with respect to $*$, and behaves naturally with respect to differentiation.
(iii) We check that $\lfloor$.$\rfloor is a trace on \left(\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}, *, \partial\right)$, by computing

$$
\begin{align*}
\lfloor P * Q\rfloor & =\operatorname{trace}\left(C e^{-x A} F P F e^{-x A} B C e^{-x A} F Q F e^{-x A} B\right) \\
& =\operatorname{trace}\left(C e^{-x A} F Q F e^{-x A} B C e^{-x A} F P F e^{-x A} B\right) \\
& =\lfloor Q * P\rfloor . \tag{4.13}
\end{align*}
$$

Hence $\Theta_{0}$ contains all the commutators $P * Q-Q * P$, and $\Theta_{0}$ is the kernel of the homomorphism $\lfloor\cdot\rfloor$, hence is an ideal for $*$. Also, we observe that for all $Q \in \Theta_{0}$, we have $\partial Q \in \Theta_{0}$ since $\lfloor\partial Q\rfloor=$ $(d / d x)\lfloor Q\rfloor=0$. Hence $\Theta_{0}$ is a differential ideal which contains the commutator subspace of $\left(\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}, *\right)$, so $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma} / \Theta_{0}$ is a commutative algebra. Also, $\partial$ determines a unique derivation $\bar{\partial}$ on $\mathcal{S} / \Theta_{0}$ by $\bar{\partial} Q=\partial Q+\Theta_{0}$ for all $Q \in \mathcal{S}$; hence $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma} / \Theta_{0}$ is a differential algebra.

We can identify $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma} / \Theta_{0}$ with a subalgebra of $H_{\infty}^{\infty}$, which is an integral domain.
Remarks 4.4 (i) Pöppe [61, 62] introduced a linear functional 「.] on Fredholm kernels $K(x, y)$ on $L^{2}(0, \infty)$ by $\lceil K\rceil=K(0,0)$. In particular, let $K, G, H, L$ be integral operators on $L^{2}(0, \infty)$
that have smooth kernels of compact support, let $\Gamma=\Gamma_{\phi(x)}$ have kernel $\phi(s+t+2 x)$, let $\Gamma^{\prime}=\frac{d}{d x} \Gamma$ and $G=\Gamma_{\psi_{(x)}}$ be another Hankel operator; then the trace satisfies

$$
\begin{align*}
\lceil\Gamma\rceil & =-\frac{d}{d x} \operatorname{trace} \Gamma  \tag{4.14}\\
\lceil\Gamma K G\rceil & =-\frac{1}{2} \frac{d}{d x} \operatorname{trace} \Gamma K G  \tag{4.15}\\
\left\lceil(I+\Gamma)^{-1} \Gamma\right\rceil & =-\operatorname{trace}\left((I+\Gamma)^{-1} \Gamma^{\prime}\right),  \tag{4.16}\\
\lceil K \Gamma\rceil\lceil G L\rceil & =-\frac{1}{2}\left\lceil K\left(\Gamma^{\prime} G+\Gamma G^{\prime}\right) L\right\rceil, \tag{4.17}
\end{align*}
$$

where (4.17) is known as the product formula. The easiest way to prove (4.15)-(4.18) is to observe that $\Gamma^{\prime} G+\Gamma G^{\prime}$ is the integral operator with kernel $-2 \phi_{(x)}(s) \psi_{(x)}(t)$, which has rank one. These ideas were subsequently revived by McKean [48]. Our formulas (4.5) and (4.6) incorporate a similar idea, and are the basis of the proof of Proposition 4.2. The results we obtain appear to be more general than those of Pöppe, and extend to periodic linear systems.
(ii) Mumford [57] considers the ring $R_{1}$ of complex functions that are holomorphic on some neighbourhood of zero, and the ring $R_{2}=C_{c}^{\infty}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{C})$ of compactly supported smooth functions; Mulase [56] considers the differential ring $R_{3}=\mathbf{C}[[x]]$ of formal complex power series; McKean and van Moerbeke [50] consider the ring $R_{4}=C^{\infty}(\mathbf{T} ; \mathbf{C})$ of smooth periodic function; then $R_{j}$ is a differential rings with respect to $D=d / d x$, and one can form the rings $R_{j}\{D\}=\left\{\sum_{k=-\infty}^{n} a_{k}(x) D^{j}: n<\infty ; a_{k} \in R_{j},-\infty ; k \leq n\right\}$ of pseudo differential operators. In this paper we use a differential ring $(\mathcal{A}, *, \partial)$ of operators on state space.

In the literature on inverse scattering, as in [4], the operator $R_{x}$ appears implicitly in various formulas, especially in the special case in which $A$ has finite rank and may be represented by a matrix. The following result extends a special case of the Sylvester-Rosenblum theorem [8]. The formula (4.18) resembles the expressions used to obtain soliton solutions of $K d V$, as in $[35,(14.12 .11)]$.

For the remainder of this section, we let $A$ be a $n \times n$ complex matrix with eigenvalues $\lambda_{j}$ $(j=1, \ldots, m)$ with geometric multiplicity $n_{j}$ such that $\lambda_{j}+\lambda_{k} \neq 0$ for all $j, k \in\{1, \ldots, m\}$; let $\mathbf{K}=\mathbf{C}\left(e^{-\lambda_{1} t}, \ldots, e^{-\lambda_{m} t}, t\right)$. Also, let $B \in \mathbf{C}^{n \times 1}$ and $C \in \mathbf{C}^{1 \times n}$.
Proposition 4.5. (i) There exists a solution $R_{t}$ to Lyapunov's equation (1.3) with initial condition $B C$, such that the entries of $R_{t}$ belong to $\mathbf{K}$, and $\tau(t) \in \mathbf{K}$;
(ii) $\phi \in \mathbf{K}$ satisfies a linear differential equation with constant coefficients.
(iii) Suppose further that all the eigenvalues of $A$ are simple. Then there exists an invertible matrix $S$ such that $S^{-1} B=\left(b_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n} \in \mathbf{C}^{n \times 1}$ and $C S=\left(c_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{n} \in \mathbf{C}^{1 \times n}$ and the tau function is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\tau(t ; \mu)= & 1+\sum_{j=1}^{n} \frac{b_{j} c_{j} e^{-2 \lambda_{j} t}}{2 \lambda_{j}} \\
& +\sum_{(j, k),(m, p): j \neq m ; k \neq p}(-1)^{j+k+m+p} \frac{b_{j} b_{m} c_{k} c_{p} e^{-\left(\lambda_{j}+\lambda_{k}+\lambda_{m}+\lambda_{p}\right) t}}{\left(\lambda_{j}+\lambda_{m}\right)\left(\lambda_{k}+\lambda_{p}\right)}+\ldots
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
+\prod_{j=1}^{n} \frac{b_{j} c_{j}}{2 \lambda_{j}} \prod_{1 \leq j<k \leq n} \frac{\left(\lambda_{j}-\lambda_{k}\right)^{2}}{\left(\lambda_{j}+\lambda_{k}\right)^{2}} e^{-2 \sum_{j=1}^{n} \lambda_{j} t} \tag{4.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof.(i) By the hypothesis, we can introduce a chain of circles $\Sigma$ that go once round each $\lambda_{j}$ in the positive sense and have all the points $-\lambda_{k}$ in their exterior. Then by [8], the matrix

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{0}=\frac{-1}{2 \pi i} \int_{\Sigma}(A+\lambda I)^{-1} B C(A-\lambda I)^{-1} d \lambda \tag{4.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

gives a solution to the equation $-A R_{0}-R_{0} A=-B C$. To see this, one considers $(A+\lambda I) R_{0}+$ $R_{0}(A-\lambda I)$ and then uses the calculus of residues.

By the Riesz functional calculus, we also have

$$
\begin{equation*}
e^{-t A}=\frac{1}{2 \pi i} \int_{\Sigma}(\lambda I-A)^{-1} e^{-t \lambda} d \lambda \tag{4.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

hence by Cauchy's residue theorem, there exist complex polynomials $p_{j}$ and $q_{j}$, and integers $m_{j} \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
e^{-t A}=\sum_{j=1}^{m} q_{j}(t) e^{-t \lambda_{j}} p_{j}(A), \tag{4.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $q_{j}(t)$ is constant if the corresponding eigenvalue is simple. We let $R_{t}=e^{-t A} R_{0} e^{-t A}$, which gives a solution to Lyapunov's equation with initial condition - BC. From (4.21), we see that all the entries of $R_{t}$ belong to $\mathbf{K}$. By the Laplace expansion of the determinant, we see that all entries of $\tau(t)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{t}\right)$ also belong to $\mathbf{K}$.
(ii) We take $\phi(t)=C e^{-t A} B \in \mathbf{K}$ by (4.21). Also, we introduce the characteristic polynomial of $(-A)$ by $\operatorname{det}(\lambda I+A)=\sum_{j=0}^{n} a_{j} \lambda^{j}$. Then by the Cayley-Hamilton theorem.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j=0}^{n} a_{j} \frac{d^{j} \phi(t)}{d t^{j}}=0 \tag{4.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) We recall Cauchy's determinant formula. For $x_{r}$ and $y_{s}$ complex numbers such that $x_{r} y_{s} \neq 1$, the determinant satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{det}\left[\frac{1}{1-x_{j} y_{k}}\right]_{j, k=1}^{n}=\frac{\prod_{1 \leq j<k \leq n}\left(x_{j}-x_{k}\right) \prod_{1 \leq m<p \leq n}\left(y_{m}-y_{p}\right)}{\prod_{1 \leq r, s \leq n}\left(1-x_{r} y_{s}\right)} . \tag{4.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

There exists an invertible matrix $S$ such that $S A S^{-1}$ is the $n \times n$ diagonal matrix $D=$ $\operatorname{diag}\left(\lambda_{1}, \ldots, \lambda_{n}\right)$, and we observe that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{t}=\left[\frac{b_{j} c_{k} e^{-\left(\lambda_{j}+\lambda_{k}\right) t}}{\lambda_{j}+\lambda_{k}}\right]_{j, k=1}^{n} \tag{4.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

satisfies $\frac{d}{d t} R_{t}=-\left[b_{j} c_{k} e^{-\left(\lambda_{j}+\lambda_{k}\right) t}\right]_{j, k=1}^{n}$ and $-D R_{t}-R_{t} D=-\left[b_{j} c_{k} e^{-\left(\lambda_{j}+\lambda_{k}\right) t}\right]_{j, k=1}^{n}$; so $R_{t}$ gives a solution of the Lyapunov equation with generator $-D$ and initial condition given by the rankone matrix $-S^{-1} B C S=-\left[b_{j} c_{k}\right]_{j, k=1}^{n}$. Hence the tau function is given by $\tau(t ; \mu)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+\mu R_{t}\right)$ for this matrix, and there is an expansion

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{det}\left[\delta_{j k}+\frac{\mu b_{j} c_{k} e^{-\left(\lambda_{j}+\lambda_{k}\right) x}}{\lambda_{j}+\lambda_{k}}\right]_{j, k=1}^{n}=\sum_{\sigma \subseteq\{1, \ldots, n\}} \mu^{\sharp \sigma} \operatorname{det}\left[\frac{b_{j} c_{k} e^{-\lambda_{j} x-\lambda_{k} x}}{\lambda_{j}+\lambda_{k}}\right]_{j, k \in \sigma} \tag{4.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which each subset $\sigma$ of $\{1, \ldots, n\}$ of order $\sharp \sigma$, contributes a minor indexed by $j, k \in \sigma$. Letting $x_{r}=\lambda_{r}$ and $y_{r}=-1 / \lambda_{r}$ in the Cauchy determinant formula, we obtain the identity

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{det}\left[\frac{b_{j} c_{k} e^{-\lambda_{j} x-\lambda_{k} x}}{\lambda_{j}+\lambda_{k}}\right]_{j, k \in \sigma}=\prod_{j \in \sigma} \frac{b_{j} c_{j} e^{-2 \lambda_{j} x}}{2 \lambda_{j}} \prod_{j, k \in \sigma: j \neq k} \frac{\lambda_{j}-\lambda_{k}}{\lambda_{j}+\lambda_{k}} . \tag{4.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the next three sections, we give significant examples of differential rings associated with linear systems.

## 5. The diagonal Green's function and the stationary $K d V$ hierarchy

In this section, we obtain properties of $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}$ in terms of $A$. Thus we obtain some sufficient conditions for some differential equations to be integrable. Throughout this section, we suppose that the hypotheses of Theorem 4.3 are in force, so the any finite set of elements of $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}$ are holomorphic functions on a some sector $\Omega$ containing $\left(x_{0}, \infty\right)$ for some $x_{0} \geq 0$. We do not generally require $u$ to be real valued, although in Theorem 5.2(iv) we impose this further condition so that we can compare our results with the classical spectral theory for the Schrödinger equation on the real line.
Definition (Stationary $K d V$ hierarchy). (i) Let $f_{0}=1$ and $f_{1}=(1 / 2) u$. Then the $K d V$ recursion formula is

$$
\begin{equation*}
4 \frac{d}{d x} f_{m+1}(x)=4 f_{1}(x) \frac{d}{d x} f_{m}(x)+4 \frac{d}{d x}\left(f_{1}(x) f_{m}(x)\right)-\frac{d^{3}}{d x^{3}} f_{m}(x) \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) Let $g_{k}=f_{k}^{\prime}$ for $k=1,2, \ldots$.
(iii) If $u$ satisfies $f_{m}=0$ for all $m$ greater than or equal to some $m_{0}$, then $u$ satisfies the stationary $K d V$ hierarchy and is said to be an algebro-geometric (finite gap) potential; see $[29,14]$.
(iv) Suppose that $u(x) \rightarrow 0$ as $x \rightarrow \infty$, and likewise for all the partial derivatives $\partial^{\ell} u / \partial x^{\ell}$; suppose further that $f_{j}(x) \rightarrow 0$ as $x \rightarrow 0$ as $x \rightarrow \infty$ for all $j=1,2, \ldots$. Then we say that the $f_{j}$ are homogeneous solutions of the $K d V$ hierarchy, and write $\hat{f}_{j}$ for $f_{j}$ to indicate that the system of differential equations (5.1) has no arbitrary constants of integration.
Proposition 5.1. Let $\mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}$ be as in Theorem 4.3. Then $f_{m}=(-1)^{m} 2\left\lfloor A^{2 m-1}\right\rfloor$ satisfies the stationary $K d V$ hierarchy (Novikov's equations), since

$$
\begin{equation*}
4 \frac{d}{d x}\left\lfloor A^{2 m+3}\right\rfloor=\frac{d^{3}}{d x^{3}}\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor+8\left(\frac{d}{d x}\lfloor A\rfloor\right)\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor+16\lfloor A\rfloor\left(\frac{d}{d x}\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor\right) . \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. (i) We have the basic identities

$$
\begin{gather*}
\lfloor A(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) X\rfloor=\left\lfloor A^{2} X\right\rfloor-2\lfloor A\rfloor\lfloor X\rfloor  \tag{5.3}\\
-2 A(A F+F A-2 F A F)=A(I-2 F) A(I-2 F)-A^{2} \tag{5.4}
\end{gather*}
$$

and their mirror images. Hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d x}\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor=\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}+A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor, \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

so

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}}\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor= & \left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}+2 A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A\right. \\
& +A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A \\
& \left.-2 A(A F+A F-2 F A F) A^{2 m+1}-2 A^{2 m+1}(A F+F A-2 F A F) A\right\rfloor \\
= & \left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}+2 A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A\right. \\
& +A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A \\
& \left.+A(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}-A^{2 m+1}+A^{2 m+3}(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A-A^{2 m+3}\right\rfloor \\
= & 2\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor-2\left\lfloor A^{2 m+3}\right\rfloor \\
= & 2\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor-2\left\lfloor A^{2 m+3}\right\rfloor \\
& +\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor+2\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor \\
= & 2\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor+2\left\lfloor A^{2 m+3}\right\rfloor \\
& -4\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor\lfloor A\rfloor-4\lfloor A\rfloor\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor . \tag{5.6}
\end{align*}
$$

Now we differentiate the first summand of the final term

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{d}{d x} 2\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor \\
&= 2\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor+2\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor \\
&-4\left\lfloor A(A F+F A-2 F A F) A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor-4\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}(A F+F A-2 F A F) A\right\rfloor \\
&= 2\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor+2\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor \\
&+2\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor-2\left\lfloor A^{2 m+3}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor \\
&+2\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor-2\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+3}\right\rfloor \\
&= 4\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor+4\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor \\
&-2\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+3}+A^{2 m+3}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor \\
&=\left.-8\lfloor A\rfloor A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor+4\left\lfloor A^{2 m+3}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor \\
&-8\lfloor A\rfloor\left\lfloor(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor+4\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+3}\right\rfloor-2 \frac{d}{d x}\left\lfloor A^{2 m+3}\right\rfloor \\
&=\left.-8\lfloor A\rfloor A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+1}+A^{2 m+1}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor \\
&+4\left\lfloor A(I-2 F) A^{2 m+3}+A^{2 m+3}(I-2 F) A\right\rfloor-2 \frac{d}{d x}\left\lfloor A^{2 m+3}\right\rfloor \\
&=-8\lfloor A\rfloor \frac{d}{d x}\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor+2 \frac{d}{d x}\left\lfloor A^{2 m+3}\right\rfloor \tag{5.7}
\end{align*}
$$

hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d^{3}}{d x^{3}}\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor=-8\lfloor A\rfloor \frac{d}{d x}\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor+4 \frac{d}{d x}\left\lfloor A^{2 m+3}\right\rfloor-8 \frac{d}{d x}\left(\lfloor A\rfloor\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor\right) ; \tag{5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

which gives the stated result.

Definition (Diagonal Greens function). Let $(-A, B, C)$ be as in Theorem 2.2. Then the diagonal Green's function is $g_{0}(x ; \zeta) / \sqrt{\zeta}$ where

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{0}(x ; \zeta)=(1 / 2)+\left\lfloor A\left(\zeta I-A^{2}\right)^{-1}\right\rfloor . \tag{5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

The notation $g_{0}(x ; \zeta)$ is chosen to indicate a generating function and also the diagonal of a Green's function; now we explain the latter connection. Let $\mathbf{C}_{+}=\{\lambda \in \mathbf{C}: \Im \lambda>0\}$ be the open upper half plane.
Theorem 5.2. Let $(-A, B, C)$ be as in Theorem 2.2.
(i) Then $g_{0}(x ; \zeta)$ is bounded and continuously differentiable in $x$ and has a unique asymptotic expansion depending on the odd powers of $A$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{0}(x ; \zeta) \asymp \frac{1}{2}+\frac{\lfloor A\rfloor}{\zeta}+\frac{\left\lfloor A^{3}\right\rfloor}{\zeta^{2}}+\frac{\left\lfloor A^{5}\right\rfloor}{\zeta^{3}}+\ldots \quad(\zeta \rightarrow-\infty) ; \tag{5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) $g_{0}(x ; \zeta)$ satisfies Drach's equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d^{3} g_{0}}{d x^{3}}=4(u+\zeta) \frac{d g_{0}}{d x}+2 \frac{d u}{d x} g_{0} \quad\left(x>x_{0} ;-\zeta>\omega\right) \tag{5.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) there exists $x_{1}>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{ \pm}(x, \zeta)=\sqrt{g_{0}(x,-\zeta)} \exp \left(\mp \sqrt{-\zeta} \int_{x_{1}}^{x} \frac{d y}{2 g_{0}(y ;-\zeta)}\right) \tag{5.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\psi_{ \pm}^{\prime \prime}(x ; \zeta)+u(x) \psi_{ \pm}(x, \zeta)=\zeta \psi_{ \pm}(x ; \zeta) \quad\left(x>x_{1}, \zeta>\omega\right) \tag{5.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iv) Suppose that $u$ is a continuous real function that is bounded below, and that $\psi_{ \pm}$ from (iii) satisfy $\psi_{+}(x ; \zeta) \in L^{2}((0, \infty) ; \mathbf{C})$ and $\psi_{-}(x ; \zeta) \in L^{2}((-\infty, 0) ; \mathbf{C})$ for all $\zeta \in \mathbf{C}_{+}$. Then $L=-\frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}}+u(x)$ defines an essentially self-adjoint operator in $L^{2}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{C})$, and the Greens function $G(x, y ; \zeta)$ which represents $(\zeta I-L)^{-1}$ has a diagonal that satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
G(x, x ; \zeta)=\frac{g_{0}(x ;-\zeta)}{\sqrt{-\zeta}} \tag{5.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. (i) Let $\pi-\theta<\arg \lambda<\theta$, so $\lambda$ and $-\lambda$ both lie in $S_{\theta}$, hence $\zeta=\lambda^{2}$ satisfies $2 \pi-2 \theta<$ $\arg \zeta<2 \theta$, so $\zeta$ lies close to $(-\infty, 0)$. Then $\zeta I-A^{2}$ is invertible and $|\zeta|\left\|\left(\zeta I-A^{2}\right)^{-1}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} \leq M$. The function

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{0}(x ; \zeta)=\frac{1}{2}+C e^{-x A}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1} A\left(\zeta I-A^{2}\right)^{-1}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1} e^{-x A} B \quad(x>0) \tag{5.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

is well defined by Theorem 2.2(iii).
To obtain the asymptotic expansion, we note that $e^{-x A}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}$ and $\left(I+R_{x}\right) e^{-x A}$ involve the factor $e^{-x A}$, where $\left(e^{-z A}\right)$ is a holomorphic semigroup on $S_{\theta-\pi / 2}$. Hence $A^{2 j+1} e^{-x A} \in$ $\mathcal{L}(H)$ and by Cauchy's estimates there exist $x_{0}, M_{0}>0$ such that $\left\|A^{2 j+1} e^{-x A}\right\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} \leq M_{0}(2 j+$ $1)$ ! for all $x \geq x_{0}>0$. As in Proposition 3.1, we have an asymptotic expansion of

$$
\begin{align*}
e^{-z A}\left((\lambda I-A)^{-1}-(\lambda I+A)^{-1}\right)= & -e^{-z A} \int_{0}^{\infty} e^{\lambda s} e^{-s A} d s-e^{-z A} \int_{0}^{\infty} e^{-\lambda s} e^{-s A} d s \\
= & e^{-z A}\left(\frac{A}{\lambda^{2}}+\frac{A^{3}}{\lambda^{4}}+\ldots+\frac{A^{2 j-1}}{\lambda^{2 j}}\right) \\
& +\frac{e^{-z A}}{\lambda^{2 j+1}} \int_{0}^{\infty} A^{2 j+1} e^{-s A}\left(e^{s \lambda}-e^{-\lambda s}\right) d s, \tag{5.16}
\end{align*}
$$

in which all the summands are in $\mathcal{L}(H)$ due to the factor $e^{-z A}$ for $z \in S_{\theta-\pi / 2}$. Hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
C e^{-x A} e^{-x A}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1} \int_{0}^{\infty} A^{2 j+1} e^{-s A}\left(e^{s \lambda}-e^{-s \lambda}\right) d s\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1} e^{-x A} B \rightarrow 0 \quad(x>0) \tag{5.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $\lambda \rightarrow i \infty$, or equivalently $\zeta \rightarrow-\infty$, so

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{0}(x, \zeta)=\frac{1}{2}+C e^{-x A}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{A}{\zeta}+\frac{A^{3}}{\zeta^{2}}+\ldots+\frac{A^{2 j-1}}{\zeta^{j}}\right)\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1} e^{-x A} B+O\left(\frac{1}{\zeta^{j+1}}\right) . \tag{5.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

This gives the asymptotic series; generally, the series is not convergent since the implied constants in the term $O\left(\zeta^{-(j+1)}\right)$ involve $(2 j+1)$ !.
(ii) From Proposition 5.1 we have

$$
\begin{align*}
4 \frac{d}{d x} \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \frac{\left\lfloor A^{2 m+3}\right\rfloor}{\zeta^{m+1}}= & \frac{d^{3}}{d x^{3}} \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \frac{\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor}{\zeta^{m+1}} \\
& +8\left(\frac{d}{d x}\lfloor A\rfloor\right) \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \frac{\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor}{\zeta^{m+1}}+16\lfloor A\rfloor \frac{d}{d x} \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \frac{\left\lfloor A^{2 m+1}\right\rfloor}{\zeta^{m+1}} ; \tag{5.19}
\end{align*}
$$

the required result follows on rearranging.
Conversely, suppose that $g_{0}$ as defined in (5.9) has an asymptotic expansion with coefficients in $C^{\infty}((0, \infty) ; \mathbf{C})$ as $\zeta \rightarrow-\infty$ and that $g_{0}(x ; \zeta)$ satisfies (5.11). Then the coefficients of $\zeta^{-j}$ satisfy a recurrence relation which is equivalent to the systems of differential equations (5.1).

The asymptotic expansion is unique in the following sense. Suppose momentarily that $t \mapsto\left\lfloor A e^{-t A^{2}}\right\rfloor$ is bounded and repeatedly differentiable on $(0, \infty)$, with $M, \omega>0$ such that $\left|\left\lfloor A e^{-t A^{2}}\right\rfloor\right| \leq M e^{\omega t}$ for $t>0$, and that there is a Maclaurin expansion

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\lfloor A e^{-t A^{2}}\right\rfloor=\lfloor A\rfloor-\left\lfloor A^{3}\right\rfloor t+\frac{\left\lfloor A^{5}\right\rfloor t^{2}}{2!}-\ldots+O\left(t^{k}\right) \tag{5.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

on some neighbourhood of $0+$. Then by Watson's Lemma, the integral $\int_{0}^{\infty}\left\lfloor A e^{-t A^{2}}\right\rfloor e^{t \zeta} d t$ has an asymptotic expansion as $\zeta \rightarrow-\infty$, where the coefficients give the formula (5.10).
(iii) Since $\left(e^{-t A}\right)_{t>0}$ is a contraction semigroup on $H$, we have $\mathcal{D}\left(A^{2}\right) \subseteq \mathcal{D}(A)$ and $\|A f\|_{H}^{2} \leq 2\left\|A^{2} f\right\|_{H}\|f\|_{H}$ for all $f \in \mathcal{D}\left(A^{2}\right)$ by the Hardy-Littlewood-Landau inequality, so $\left\|\zeta f+A^{2} f\right\|_{H} \geq \sqrt{\zeta}\|A f\|_{H}$ for $\zeta>0$. We deduce that $A^{2}-2 A+\zeta I$ is invertible for $\zeta>9$ and generally for all $\zeta \in \mathbf{C}$ such that $\Re \zeta$ is sufficiently large. By Proposition 5.1 and the multiplicative property of the bracket, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{2 g_{0}(x ;-\zeta)}=1+\left\lfloor 2 A\left(\zeta I+A^{2}-2 A\right)^{-1}\right\rfloor \tag{5.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

and we observe that $g_{0}(x ;-\zeta) \rightarrow 1 / 2$ as $x \rightarrow \infty$, so there exists $x_{1}>0$ such that $g_{0}(x,-\zeta)>0$ for all $x>x_{1}$ and the differential equation integrates to

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{0} \frac{d^{2} g_{0}}{d x^{2}}-\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{d g_{0}}{d x}\right)^{2}=2(u-\zeta) g_{0}^{2}+\frac{\zeta}{2} \tag{5.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

So we can define $\psi(x ; \zeta)$ as in (5.13), and then one verifies the differential equation for $\psi(x ; \zeta)$ by using (5.22).
(iv) By a theorem of Weyl [32, 10.1.4], $L$ is of limit point type at $\pm \infty$, and there exist nontrivial solutions $\psi_{ \pm}(x ; \zeta)$ to $-\psi_{ \pm}^{\prime \prime}(x ; \zeta)+u(x) \psi_{ \pm}(x ; \zeta)=\zeta \psi_{ \pm}(x ; \zeta)$ such that $\psi_{+}(x ; \zeta) \in$ $L^{2}(0, \infty)$ and $\psi_{-}(x ; \zeta) \in L^{2}(-\infty, 0)$, and these are unique up to constant multiples. Also the inverse operator $(-\zeta I+L)^{-1}$ may be represented as an integral operator in $L^{2}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{C})$ with kernel $G(x, y ; \zeta)$, which has diagonal

$$
\begin{equation*}
G(x, x ; \zeta)=\frac{\psi_{+}(x ; \zeta) \psi_{-}(x ; \zeta)}{\operatorname{Wr}\left(\psi_{+}(; \zeta), \psi_{-}(; \zeta)\right)} \quad(\Im \zeta>0) \tag{5.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Given $\psi_{\mp}$ as in (iii), we can compute $\psi_{+}(x ; \zeta) \psi_{-}(x ; \zeta)=g_{0}(x ;-\zeta)$ and their Wronskian is $\operatorname{Wr}\left(\psi_{+}, \psi_{-}\right)=\sqrt{-\zeta}$, hence the result.

Remarks 5.3 (i) The importance of the diagonal Greens function is emphasized in [30]. Gesztesy and Holden [29, Lemma 1.6.1] obtain an asymptotic expansion of the diagonal $G(x, x ; \zeta)$ which is consistent with Theorem 5.2(i). Under conditions discussed in (5.48), we have similar asymptotics as $-\zeta \rightarrow \infty$.
(ii) Let $\psi$ and $\varphi$ be solutions of $-f^{\prime \prime}+u f=\zeta f$ for some $u \in C^{2}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{C})$ such that $\mathrm{Wr}(\psi, \varphi)^{2}=-\zeta$, and then let $g(x)=\psi(x) \varphi(x)$. By differentiating, one checks that $g g^{\prime \prime}-$ $\left(g^{\prime}\right)^{2} / 2-2(u-\zeta) g^{2}=C$ for some constant $C$, and one can evaluate $C=-\operatorname{Wr}(\psi, \varphi)^{2} / 2$. Hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho(x)=\sqrt{g(x)} \exp \left( \pm \sqrt{-\zeta} \int_{0}^{x} \frac{d y}{2 g(y)}\right) \tag{5.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

gives a solution of $-\rho^{\prime \prime}+u \rho=\zeta \rho$.
(iii) Drach observed that one can start with the differential equation (5.11), and produce the solutions (5.24); see [14]. He showed that Schrödinger's equation is integrable by quadratures, if and only if (5.11) can be integrated by quadratures for typical values of $\zeta$, and Brezhnev translated his results into the modern theory of finite gap integration [14]. Having established integrability of Schrödinger's equation by quadratures, one can introduce the
hyperelliptic spectral curve $\mathcal{E}$ with $g<\infty$ and proceed to express the solution in terms of the Baker-Akhiezer function. Hence one can integrate the equation and express the solution in terms of the Riemann's theta function on the Jacobian of $\mathcal{E}$, as in [43]. Our presentation follows Drach's; one advantage is that we can deal with rather degenerate solutions of differential equations, such as occur in the theory of solitons, and can evade technicalities regarding special points on Jacobians of compact Riemann surfaces.

Proposition 5.4. (i) In the context of Theorem 4.3, suppose that there exists a non-zero odd complex polynomial $p_{0}(X)$ such that $\left\lfloor p_{0}(A)\right\rfloor=0$. Then $\mathbf{C}[u, d u / d x, \ldots$,$] is a Noetherian$ differential ring for $d / d x$ and the usual multiplication.
(ii) In particular, (i) holds when $A^{2}$ is algebraic.

Proof. (i) It follows from Proposition 5.1 that $\left\lfloor A^{2 j-1}\right\rfloor=c_{j} u^{(2 j)}+P_{j}\left(u, u^{\prime}, \ldots, u^{(2 j-1)}\right)$ where $P$ is a complex polynomial, and $c_{j} \neq 0$. Adding multiples of such identities, and using the hypotheses, we deduce that there exists $m$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d^{2 m} u}{d x^{2 m}}=Q_{2 m}\left(u, \frac{d u}{d x}, \ldots, \frac{d^{2 m-1} u}{d x^{2 m-1}}\right), \tag{5.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $Q_{2 m}$ is a complex polynomial which is determined by $p_{0}$ and the $f_{j}$. By repeatedly differentiating this identity, and substituting back, one can obtain polynomials $Q_{n}$ such that $u^{(n)}=$ $Q_{n}\left(u, d u / d x, \ldots, d^{n-1} u / d x^{n-1}\right)$, for all $n \geq 2 m$. Hence $\mathbf{C}\left[u, d u / d x, \ldots, d^{2 m-1} u / d x^{2 m-1}\right]$ gives all of $\mathbf{C}[u, d u / d x, \ldots$,$] .$

Since $u$ is meromorphic on the domain $\Omega$, the algebra $\mathbf{C}\left[u, d u / d x, \ldots, d^{2 m-1} u / \partial x^{2 m-1}\right]$ is an integral domain, and we have shown it to be closed under differentiation. By mapping $X_{j} \mapsto$ $d^{j} u / d x^{j}$ for $j=0, \ldots, 2 m-1$, we obtain a short exact sequence of algebra homomorphisms

$$
\begin{equation*}
0 \rightarrow J \rightarrow \mathbf{C}\left[X_{0}, \ldots, X_{2 m-1}\right] \rightarrow \mathbf{C}\left[u, \frac{d u}{d x}, \ldots, \frac{d^{2 m-1} u}{d x^{2 m-1}}\right] \rightarrow 0 \tag{5.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the ideal $J$ is prime. Hence $\mathbf{C}\left[u, d u / d x, \ldots, d^{2 m-1} u / d x^{2 m-1}\right]$ is finitely generated as an algebra. Also, the $\mathbf{C}\left[X_{0}, \ldots, X_{2 m-1}\right] / J$ is naturally isomorphic as an algebra to the co ordinate ring $\mathbf{C}[V]$, where $V$ is the affine variety $\left\{z \in \mathbf{C}^{2 m}: f(z)=0, \forall f \in J\right\}$.
(ii) If $A^{2}$ is algebraic, then there exists a monic complex polynomial such that $p\left(A^{2}\right)=0$, hence $A p\left(A^{2}\right)=0$ and (i) applies.

Proposition 5.5. Suppose that $\left\lfloor A^{2 n+1}\right\rfloor=0$ for some $n \geq 0$.
(i) Then $u=-4\lfloor A\rfloor$ is finite gap;
(ii) $-d^{2} / d x^{2}+u$ commutes with a differential operator of odd order;
(iii) Schrödinger's equation can be integrated by quadratures over $\mathbf{C}[u, d u / d x, \ldots$,$] .$
(iv) The image of $\left(A, \partial A, \ldots, \partial^{2 n} A\right) \in \mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}^{2 n+1}$ under $\lfloor\cdot\rfloor$ equals $\left(u, u^{\prime}, \ldots, u^{(2 n)}\right)$, where $\left(u \cdot u^{\prime}, \ldots, u^{(2 n)}\right)$ satisfy a system of polynomial equations which determine a complex algebraic variety.

Proof. (i) Note that the hypothesis does not change if we apply the translation $(-A, B, C) \mapsto$ $\left(-A, e^{-t A} B, C\right)$ so that $u(x) \mapsto u(x+t)$.Then $u=-4\lfloor A\rfloor$ satisfies

$$
\begin{align*}
& f_{1}=(1 / 2) u+(1 / 2) c_{1}=-2\lfloor A\rfloor+(1 / 2) c_{1} \\
& f_{2}=-(1 / 8) u^{\prime \prime}+(3 / 8) u^{2}+\left(c_{1} / 4\right) u+\left(c_{2} / 2\right)-c_{1} / 8=2\left\lfloor A^{3}\right\rfloor-c_{1}\lfloor A\rfloor+\left(c_{2} / 2\right)-c_{1} / 8 \tag{5.27}
\end{align*}
$$

Under the hypotheses of Theorem 4.3, all of the $c_{j}$ vanish since $u$ and its derivatives converge to zero as $x \rightarrow \infty$, so the $f_{j}$ are homogeneous solutions of $K d V$ hierarchy. By Proposition 5.1, $f_{m}(x)=0$ for all $m>n$.
(ii) With $L=-d^{2} / d x^{2}+u$, we have an ordinary differential operator

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{2 n+1}=\sum_{j=0}^{n}\left(f_{n-j} \frac{d}{d x}-2^{-1} \frac{d f_{n-j}}{d x}\right)(-L)^{j} \tag{5.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[L, P_{2 n+1}\right]=2 f_{n+1}^{\prime} \tag{5.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) By Propositions 5.1 (ii) and 5.4, we have a Noetherian differential ring

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{C}\left[u, d u / d x, \ldots, ; \zeta ; g, g, g^{\prime \prime}\right] \tag{5.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

We aim to prove that we can obtain all elements of this ring by quadratures over $\mathbf{C}[u, d u / d x, \ldots$, and thereby solve Schrödinger's equation. We observe that $2 \zeta^{n} g_{0}(x ; \zeta)$ is a monic polynomial of degree $n$ in $\zeta$. Changing notation, we introduce $F(x ; \lambda)=\sum_{\ell=0}^{n} f_{n-\ell}(x) \lambda^{\ell}$ where the coefficients of $F$, as a monic polynomial of degree $n$ in $\lambda$, are polynomials in $u$ and its spatial derivatives, since $f_{j} \in \mathcal{A}$. Hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
p(\lambda)=\frac{1}{2} F(x ; \lambda) \frac{\partial^{2} F(x ; \lambda)}{\partial x^{2}}-\frac{1}{4}\left(\frac{\partial F(x ; \lambda)}{\partial x}\right)^{2}-(u(x)-\lambda) F(x ; \lambda)^{2} \tag{5.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

is a polynomial of degree $2 n+1$ in $\lambda$, with coefficients in $\mathcal{A}$, which is actually independent of $x$, so $p(\lambda) \in \mathbf{C}[\lambda]$. Now we introduce

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{ \pm}(x ; \lambda)=\sqrt{F(x ; \lambda)} \exp \left( \pm \mu \int^{x} \frac{d \xi}{F(\xi ; \lambda)}\right) \tag{5.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

which satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\psi_{\lambda}^{\prime \prime}}{\psi_{\lambda}}=\frac{1}{F(x ; \lambda)^{2}}\left((u-\lambda) F(x ; \lambda)^{2}+p(\lambda)+\mu^{2}\right) \tag{5.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

hence $\psi_{\lambda}$ gives the solution to Schrödinger's equation $\psi_{ \pm}^{\prime \prime}(x ; \lambda)=(u-\lambda) \psi_{ \pm}^{\prime \prime}(x ; \lambda)$ when $(\lambda, \mu)$ lies on

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{E}=\left\{(\lambda, \mu): \mu^{2}=-p(\lambda)\right\} \tag{5.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iv) This follows from an argument of Mumford [57]. We introduce the polynomials in $\lambda$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
U(\lambda ; x)=F ; \quad W(\lambda ; x)=(\lambda-u(x)) F+\frac{1}{2} \frac{\partial^{2} F}{\partial x^{2}} ; \quad V(\lambda ; x)=\frac{i}{2} \frac{\partial F}{\partial x} \tag{5.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

which have degrees $n, n+1$ and $n-1$ respectively, for typical $x$, and the coefficients are given by the $f_{j}$ and their partial derivatives with respect to $x$. Then we have a monic polynomial

$$
\begin{equation*}
p(\lambda)=U(\lambda ; x) W(\lambda ; x)+V(\lambda ; x)^{2} \tag{5.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

of degree $2 n+1$, where the leading terms are

$$
\begin{equation*}
U=\lambda^{n}+\lambda^{n-1} f_{1}+\ldots, \quad V=(i / 2) f_{1}^{\prime} \lambda^{n-1}+\ldots, \quad W=\lambda^{n+1}+\left(f_{1}-u\right) \lambda^{n}+\ldots . \tag{5.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $\mathcal{E}$ gives a hyperelliptic curve over $\mathbf{C}$ of genus $g \leq n$. The Picard group $\operatorname{Pic}(\mathcal{E})$ is the set of divisors on $\mathcal{E}$, modulo linear equivalence as in [65]. Then the Jacobian $J$ is the subgroup of $\operatorname{Pic}(\mathcal{E})$ consisting of equivalence classes that have degree zero; this group $J$ gives an Abelian variety which may be determined algebraically by arguments presented in [57]. There is a Riemann theta function $\vartheta$ which is entire and quasi-periodic on $J$, and has zero set $\theta_{0}=\{z \in$ $J: \vartheta(z)=0\}$. When we replace $u(x)$ by translation to $u(x+t)$, we make a corresponding automorphism $p(\lambda) \mapsto p(\lambda ; t), U(\lambda ; x) \mapsto U(\lambda ; x, t)$, etc. One can then differentiate with respect to the parameter $t$, and thus introduce a vector field $D_{\infty}$ on $J$.

One can also introduce a vector field $D_{\theta}$ on $J$ and the meromorphic function $\wp(z)=$ $D_{\infty}^{2} \log \vartheta$ on $J \backslash \theta_{0}$. Comparing our calculations with those of Mumford, we obtain $D_{\infty}=$ $(i / 2) \partial / \partial x$ and $4 \wp+d=u / 2$ for some constant $d$. Thus we can regard $x$ as a coordinate for motion along the vector field determined by $D_{\infty}$ in the tangent space to $J$, and $u=8 \wp+2 d$ as an extension of $u$ to a function on $J \backslash \theta_{0}$. Likewise, the functions $f_{j}, g_{k}$ of (5.1) may be extended to complex functions on $J \backslash \theta_{0}$ give rise to an embedding $J \backslash \theta_{0} \rightarrow \mathbf{C}^{2 g+1}$ by $z \mapsto\left(\wp, D_{\infty} \wp, \ldots, D_{\infty}^{2 n} \wp\right)$. By analogy, in the context of Theorem 5.3 we can regard $\left(A, \partial A, \ldots, \partial^{2 n} A\right) \in \mathcal{A}_{\Sigma}^{2 n+1}$ as coordinates for the Jacobian. See [49, article 9].

Example 5.6. Suppose that $A$ satisfies $\left\lfloor a_{3} A^{3}+a_{1} A\right\rfloor=0$, which is the first non trivial case of Proposition 5.4. Then $a_{3} f_{2}-a_{1} f_{1}=0$, so

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{3}\left(-u^{\prime \prime} / 16+3 u^{2} / 16+c_{1} u / 8+c_{2} / 4-c_{1} / 16\right)-\left(a_{1} / 4\right) u-\left(a_{1} / 4\right) c_{1}=0 . \tag{5.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence we can identify $V$ with a curve $X_{1}^{2}=p\left(X_{0}\right)$ where $p$ is a cubic; see [49]. In the context of Theorem 4.3, we have $u(x) \rightarrow 0$ as $x \rightarrow \infty$ along with $u^{\prime}, u^{\prime \prime}$, so the solution has the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x)=\frac{2 a_{1}}{a_{3}} \operatorname{sech}^{2} \sqrt{\frac{-a_{1}}{4 a_{3}}}(x+\gamma) \tag{5.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

with constant $\gamma \in \mathbf{C}$, as is familiar from the theory of solitons. However, (5.37) also has solutions in terms of Weierstrass's elliptic function $\wp$, and in section 7 we construct linear systems with potential $\wp$.
(ii) For $g>1$, does there exist a linear system such that the corresponding potential is the $\wp$ function for a hyperelliptic curve of genus $g$ ? We obtain a partial solution of this in section 7, by using the Schottky-Klein prime function.

Proposition 5.7. Suppose that $g_{0}\left(x_{j}, \zeta_{j}\right)=0$ and $\frac{\partial g_{0}}{\partial \zeta}\left(x_{j}, \zeta_{j}\right) \neq 0$ for some $x_{j}>x_{0}$ and nonzero $\zeta_{j} \in \mathbf{C} \backslash \operatorname{Spec}\left(A^{2}\right)$.
(i) Then there exist $\varepsilon>0$ and a differentiable family of solutions of (5.13) which are parametrized by an arc $\left.\left\{\mu_{j}(t): x_{j}-\varepsilon<t<x_{j}+\varepsilon\right)\right\}$ passing through $\zeta_{j}$ such that $\psi\left(t, \mu_{j}(t)\right)=$ 0 ;
(ii) Dubrovin's equation holds

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d \mu_{j}}{d x}(t)=\frac{ \pm \sqrt{\zeta}}{\frac{\partial g_{0}}{\partial \zeta}\left(t, \mu_{j}(t)\right)} . \tag{5.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. (i) First we make an observation about the zeros of $g_{0}(x, \zeta)$. The exponential matrix

$$
\exp \left(t\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 1 & 0  \tag{5.41}\\
0 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 4 \zeta & 0
\end{array}\right]\right)
$$

has entries that are entire functions of $\zeta$ of order $\rho$, where $\rho \leq 1 / 2$. We deduce that the general solution $g(x, \zeta)$ of (5.11) may be written as an entire function of $\zeta$ of order $\rho \leq 1 / 2$, so there exist functions $g_{1}(x)$ and $\mu_{j}(x)$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
g(x, \zeta)=g_{1}(x)\left(\zeta-\mu_{0}(x)\right) \prod_{j=1}^{\infty}\left(1-\frac{\zeta}{\mu_{j}(x)}\right) \tag{5.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can, of course, divide this by any function of $\zeta$ and still have a solution of the linear differential equation; in particular, we obtain $g_{0}(x, \zeta)$ in this way.

Let $x_{j}>x_{0}$ and suppose that $g_{0}\left(x_{j}, \zeta_{j}\right)=0$ where $\zeta_{j} \in \mathbf{C} \backslash \operatorname{Spec}\left(A^{2}\right)$ so that $\zeta \mapsto g_{0}\left(x_{j}, \zeta\right)$ is holomorphic. By hypothesis, we have $\frac{\partial g_{0}}{\partial \zeta}\left(x_{j}, \zeta_{j}\right) \neq 0$, which rules out the possibility of a multiple zero at $\zeta_{j}$ in the factorization (). Now we apply the implicit function theorem to the formula $g_{0}(t, \zeta)=0$, noting that $\zeta \mapsto g_{0}\left(x_{j}, \zeta\right)$ has a simple zero at $\zeta=\zeta_{j}$. By Rouché's theorem and the calculus of residues, there exist $\varepsilon_{1}, \varepsilon_{2}>0$ such that the contour integral

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu_{j}(t)=\frac{1}{2 \pi i} \int_{C\left(\zeta_{j}, \varepsilon_{1}\right)} \frac{z \frac{\partial g_{0}}{\partial \zeta}(t, z) d z}{g_{0}(t, z)} \tag{5.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

determines a continuously differentiable function $\mu_{j}:\left(x_{j}-\varepsilon_{2}, x_{j}+\varepsilon_{2}\right) \rightarrow \mathbf{C}$ which satisfies $\mu_{j}\left(x_{j}\right)=\zeta_{j}$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial g_{0}}{\partial x}\left(t, \mu_{j}(t)\right)+\frac{\partial g_{0}}{\partial \zeta}\left(t, \mu_{j}(t)\right) \frac{d \mu_{j}}{d x}(t)=0 . \tag{5.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) By (5.22), we have $\frac{\partial g_{0}}{\partial x}\left(x_{j}, \zeta_{j}\right)^{2}=\zeta \neq 0$ hence Dubrovin's equation holds. Also $d \mu_{j} / d x \neq 0$, so $\mu_{j}$ determines a differentiable arc in $\mathbf{C} \backslash \operatorname{Spec}\left(A^{2}\right)$. Then for $\zeta=\mu_{j}(t)$ on this arc, $\psi_{+}\left(x, \mu_{j}(t)\right) \psi_{-}\left(x, \mu_{j}(t)\right)=g_{0}\left(x, \mu_{j}(t)\right)$ vanishes at $x=t$, so one of the solutions $\psi_{ \pm}\left(x ; \mu_{j}(t)\right)$ satisfies $\left.\psi_{ \pm}\left(t ; \mu_{j}(t)\right)\right)=0$ for all $t \in\left(x_{j}-\varepsilon_{3}, x_{j}+\varepsilon_{3}\right)$ for some $0<\varepsilon_{3}<\varepsilon_{1}$.

If $\zeta_{j} \in \mathbf{R}$ and $g_{0}(x, \zeta)$ is real-valued for all $(x, \zeta) \in \mathbf{R}^{2}$ in a neighbourhood of $\left(x_{j}, \zeta_{j}\right)$, then we can choose the $\operatorname{arc}\left\{\mu_{j}(t): t \in\left(x_{j}-\varepsilon_{3}, x_{j}+\varepsilon_{3}\right)\right\}$ to be an open subinterval of $\mathbf{R}$.

Definition (Characteristic function). For $(-A, B, C)$ as in Theorem 2.2 let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(\lambda ; x)=\int_{0}^{\lambda} \frac{i g_{0}(x ;-\zeta)}{\sqrt{-\zeta}} d \zeta \tag{5.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

and define the characteristic function by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta(\lambda ; x)=2 \cos \varphi(\lambda ; x) \quad(2 \pi-2 \theta<\arg \lambda<2 \theta) . \tag{5.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

Gesztesy and Simon [30] have developed another approach to $G(x, x ; \zeta)$ for self-adjoint Schrödinger operators which involves the xi function and Krein's spectral shift; see also [34]. We adopt their terminology from [30, (6.8)] in the following context. To understand the sign conventions, it helps to bear in mind that, for $L$ self-adjoint, the diagonal Greens function $G(x, x ; \zeta)$ is purely imaginary for $\zeta$ in the essential spectrum of $L$.

Suppose that $\left(\lambda_{j}\right)$ is a non-zero complex sequence such that
(i) $\left(\Re \lambda_{j}\right)_{j=0}^{\infty}$ is increasing;
(ii) $\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} 1 /\left(1+\left|\Re \lambda_{j}\right|^{\alpha}\right)$ converges for all $\alpha>1 / 2$;
(iii) $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty}\left|\lambda_{2 n-1}-\lambda_{2 n}\right|$ converges.

By (ii), we can introduce the functions

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{e}(\lambda)=\prod_{j=0}^{\infty}\left(1-\frac{\lambda}{\lambda_{2 j}}\right), \quad F_{o}(\lambda)=\prod_{j=1}^{\infty}\left(1-\frac{\lambda}{\lambda_{2 j-1}}\right) \tag{5.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

which are entire and of order $\rho \leq 1 / 2$. Then $F_{0}(\lambda) / F_{e}(\lambda)$ is meromorphic with only simple zeros and poles, so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{E}=\left\{(z, \lambda): z^{2}=\frac{F_{o}(\lambda)}{F_{e}(\lambda)}\right\} \tag{5.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

determines a hyperelliptic curve of genus $g \leq \infty$. There exists a homology basis of $\mathcal{E}$ which includes loops $\alpha_{j}$ around $\left[\lambda_{2 j-1}, \lambda_{2 j}\right]$. Let $\mu_{j}(x)$ lie on $\alpha_{j}$.
Definition (Discretely dominated). Then $g_{0}$ is discretely dominated if there exist such data, with only the $\mu_{j}$ depending upon $x$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{0}(x,-\zeta)=\frac{1}{2 \sqrt{\lambda_{0}-\zeta}} \prod_{j=1}^{g} \frac{\mu_{j}(x)-\zeta}{\sqrt{\left(\lambda_{2 j}-\zeta\right)\left(\lambda_{2 j-1}-\zeta\right)}} \quad(\Im \zeta>0) \tag{5.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

Gesztesy and Simon provide several examples of real potentials such that $g_{0}$ is discretely dominated; our constants are consistent with their Example 3.2. The $\mu_{j}(x)$ are referred to as Dirichlet eigenvalues, or tied eigenvalues, while the differential equation (5.40) was derived by Dubrovin for real finite-gap periodic potentials. Given the general form (5.49), the further analysis reduces to the system of coupled differential equations for $d \mu_{j}(x) / d x$. When $g_{0}$ is discretely dominated, its properties are most easily understood in terms of conformal mapping.

In the following, we define the square root function by $s(\lambda)=\sqrt{\lambda}=|\lambda|^{1 / 2} \exp (i \arg (\lambda) / 2)$, where $-\pi<\arg \lambda \leq \pi$ is the principal value of the argument, and recall that $h^{*}(\lambda, x)=\overline{h(\bar{\lambda}, \bar{x})}$.
Proposition 5.8. (i) Suppose that $\left(\left\lfloor A^{2 j-1}\right\rfloor\right)_{j=1}^{\infty}$ is a sequence of real functions of $x \in \mathbf{R}$. Then $\varphi^{*}(\lambda ; x)=\varphi(\lambda ; x)$.
(ii) Suppose that $g_{0}$ is discretely dominated with $\lambda_{0}=0$ and $\lambda_{j}$ real, and suppose that that $\Delta(\lambda ; x)$ is real for all $\lambda \in \mathbf{R}$. Then $\lambda \mapsto \varphi(\lambda ; x)$ gives a conformal map of the upper half plane onto a slit domain in the first quadrant with possible vertical slits at $n \pi$, for $n \in \mathbf{N}$, and $\lambda \mapsto \Delta(\lambda ; x)$ is entire.
Proof. (i) By the uniqueness of asymptotic expansions in Theorem 5.2(i), we have $g_{0}^{*}(x ; \zeta)=$ $g_{0}(x ; \zeta)$, and since $s^{*}(\zeta)=s(\zeta)$, we deduce that $\varphi^{*}(\lambda ; x)=\varphi(\lambda ; x)$ for $x \in \mathbf{R}$ and $\lambda \in \mathbf{C} \backslash \mathbf{R}$. At this stage, we do not claim that $\varphi$ is continuous across the real axis.
(ii) Suppose that $\lambda_{0}<\lambda_{1}<\lambda_{2}<\ldots<\lambda_{2 g}$ and $\lambda_{2 j-1}<\mu_{j}<\lambda_{2 j}$ for $j=1, \ldots, g$; then for $c_{0} \geq 0$, let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(\lambda)=\int_{0}^{\lambda} \frac{1}{2 \sqrt{\zeta}} \prod_{j=1}^{g} \frac{\mu_{j}-\zeta}{\sqrt{\left(\lambda_{2 j}-\zeta\right)\left(\lambda_{2 j-1}-\zeta\right)}} d \zeta+i c_{0} \tag{5.50}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $\varphi$ is holomorphic for $\{\lambda \in \mathbf{C}: \Im \lambda>0\}$ with $\varphi(\lambda) / \sqrt{\lambda} \rightarrow 1$ as $|\lambda| \rightarrow \infty$; the image of $\lambda \in(-\infty, 0)$ is the subinterval $\left(i c_{0}, i \infty\right)$ of the imaginary axis; whereas the image of $(0, \infty)$ consists of horizontal line segments running from left to right, interspersed by vertical lines running upwards then downwards, and the horizontal line segment together run towards $\infty$. For all sufficiently large $c_{0}>0$, the image of $\{\lambda \in \mathbf{C}: \Im \lambda>0\}$ is a domain $\Omega$ in the first quadrant, with boundary consisting of horizontal and vertical line segments. This is a degenerate case of the Schwarz-Christoffel map, in which the triple $\lambda_{2 j-1}<\mu_{j}<\lambda_{2 j}$ corresponds to a degenerate triangle on the edge of $\Omega$; two of the vertices of the degenerate triangle may coincide, giving a slit.

Now suppose $c_{0}=0$, and observe that $\Delta(\lambda ; x)$ is real, if and only if either $\varphi(\lambda ; x) \in \mathbf{R}$ or there exists $n \in \mathbf{Z}$ such that $\varphi(\lambda ; x)-n \pi \in i \mathbf{R}$. We deduce that the only possible slits are at $\Re \varphi(\lambda ; \pi)=n \pi$ for some $n \in \mathbf{N}$, that all slits are vertical, and each starts and finishes at the same point on the real axis.

We apply the Schwarz reflection principle. By (i), $\Delta^{*}(\lambda ; x)=\Delta(\lambda ; x)$, so we need to check continuity across $\lambda \in \mathbf{R}$ Whereas $\sqrt{\zeta}$ is discontinuous across $(-\infty, 0)$, we only need deal with $\cos \sqrt{\zeta}$, which is continuous. More precisely, by (i), the function $\varphi(\lambda ; x)$ satisfies $\varphi(\lambda ; x)=\varphi^{*}(\lambda ; x)$, and $g(x ;-\zeta)$ and $s(-\zeta)^{2}$ are continuous across $(-\infty, 0)$, hence $\varphi(\lambda ; x)^{2}$ is holomorphic across $(-\infty, 0)$, so $\Delta(\lambda ; x)$ is holomorphic across $(-\infty ; 0)$; likewise, $\Delta(\lambda ; x)$ is holomorphic across the spectral bands $\left[\lambda_{2 j}, \lambda_{2 j+1}\right]$. As $\lambda$ approaches a spectral gap $\left(\lambda_{2 j-1}, \lambda_{2 j}\right)$ the image $\varphi(\lambda ; x)$ approaches a slit on the boundary of $\Omega$; now $\cos (k \pi \pm i y)=(-1)^{k} \cosh y$, so $\Delta(\lambda ; x)$ takes the same value, irrespective of which side $\lambda$ approaches from, hence $\Delta(\lambda ; x)$ is continuous across $\mathbf{R}$ and defines an entire function.

## 6. The differential ring of a periodic linear system

In this section we obtain analogues of Theorem 4.3 for periodic groups. First we formulate the notion of a periodic linear system, where we take section 4 as our guide. We show that
the corresponding $\tau$ functions have properties analogous to those in Theorem 4.3. For periodic and meromorphic $u$, the differential equation $-\psi^{\prime \prime}+u \psi=\lambda \psi$ is known as the complex Hill's equation. We show how periodic linear systems appear in the Floquet solutions, and obtain a counterpart of Proposition 5.5. Previous authors [22, 28 37, 73] explored the connection between Hill's equation and scattering solutions of Schrödinger's equation on the line. In the current paper, we show how Lyapunov's equation is the basis for some analogies. In section 7 we consider particular examples, which exhibit subtle effects.

For periodic linear systems, the defining integral for $R_{x}$ in Proposition 2.1 does not converge, and the contour integral for $R_{0}$ in Proposition 4.5 is inapplicable; nevertheless, we can adapt a result of Bhatia, Dacis and McIntosh discussed in [8] and otherwise construct $R_{x}$ satisfying (1.3).
Lemma 6.1. Let $B \in \mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$ and $C \in \mathcal{L}(H)$, and let $\left(e^{-t A}\right)_{t \in \mathbf{R}}$ be a bounded and strongly continuous group of operators on $H$.
(i) The space $\mathcal{D}\left(A^{\infty}\right)$ is dense.
(ii) Suppose that the spectrum of $A$ does not intersect the spectrum of $-A$. Then there exists $E \in \mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$ such that $R_{x}=e^{x A} E e^{x A}$ gives a solution to the Lyapunov equation $-\frac{d}{d x} R_{x}=$ $A R_{x}+R_{x} A$ such that $A R_{0}+R_{0} A=B C$ and $R_{x}$ is trace class for all $x \in \mathbf{R}$.
(iii) Suppose that the range of $E$ is contained in $\mathcal{D}\left(A^{\infty}\right)$ and $A^{k} E \in \mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$ for all $k$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau_{\zeta}(x)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+(\zeta I+A)(\zeta I-A)^{-1} e^{x A} E e^{x A}\right) \quad(x \in \mathbf{R}) \tag{6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

has an asymptotic expansion in powers of $\zeta^{-j}$ as $\zeta \rightarrow \pm \infty$.
(iv) Suppose further that $\left(e^{x A}\right)$ is periodic with period $2 \pi$. Then the spectrum of $A$ is contained in $i \mathbf{Z}$ and the coefficients in the asymptotic expansion are periodic with period $\pi$.
Proof. (i) By standard results [21], $A^{2}$ generates an analytic semigroup

$$
\begin{equation*}
e^{t A^{2}}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{4 \pi t}} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-s^{2} / 4 t} e^{s A} d s \quad(t>0) \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

The domains of the powers of $A$ satisfy $\mathcal{D}(A) \supseteq \mathcal{D}\left(A^{2}\right)$, and $\mathcal{D}\left(A^{\infty}\right)$ is dense.
(ii) The main problem is to find $E$ such that $E A+A E=B C$. By a theorem of Sz.-Nagy, the group $\left(e^{-t A}\right)$ is similar to a group of unitaries, so there exists an invertible operator $S$ and a unitary group $\left(U_{t}\right)_{t \in \mathbf{R}}$ such that $e^{-t A}=S U_{t} S^{-1}$. Hence the spectrum of $A$ lies on $i \mathbf{R}$ and is a closed subset. By hypothesis, there exists $\delta>0$ such that the spectra of $A$ and $-A$ are separated by $\delta$ and $\sigma(A) \cup \sigma(-A)$ does not intersect $[-i \delta, i \delta]$. By Plancherel's theorem, we can construct $f \in L^{1}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{C})$ such that $\hat{f}(\xi)=1 / \xi$ for all $\xi \in \mathbf{R}$ such that $|\xi| \geq \delta$. Then the integral

$$
\begin{equation*}
E=\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-x A} B C e^{-x A} f(x) d x \tag{6.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

has a weakly continuous integrand in $\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$, and is absolutely convergent with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|E\|_{\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)} \leq \int_{-\infty}^{\infty}\|B\|_{\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)}\|C\|_{\mathcal{L}(H)} M^{2}|f(x)| d x \tag{6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

hence $E$ is trace class. Using the spectral representation of $U_{t}$, one can show that $A E+E A=$ $B C$. Next we introduce $R_{x}=e^{-x A} E e^{-x A}$ which gives a one parameter family of trace class operators such that $-\frac{d R_{x}}{d x}=A R_{x}+R_{x} A$. On verifies this identity on $\mathcal{D}(A)$ and then observes that both sides are trace class.
(iii) For all $\zeta \in \mathbf{R}$ we can invert $\zeta I-A$, and there is an asymptotic expansion

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\zeta I+A)(\zeta I-A)^{-1} E e^{2 x A}=\left(I+\frac{2 A}{\zeta}+\frac{2 A^{2}}{\zeta^{2}}+\ldots\right) E e^{2 x A} \tag{6.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

valid as $\zeta \rightarrow \pm \infty$. The result follows.
(iv) If $\left(e^{x A}\right)$ is periodic with period $2 \pi$, then $\left(e^{x A}\right)_{x \in \mathbf{R}}$ is bounded, and the spectrum of $A$ is contained in $i \mathbf{Z}$.

Example 6.2. Let $H=L^{2}(\mathbf{R} / 2 \pi \mathbf{Z} ; d \theta /(2 \pi))$ and $A: e^{i n \theta} \mapsto i(1+|n|) e^{i n \theta}$, so $\left(e^{t A}\right)$ is a $2 \pi$ periodic strongly continuous unitary group. Also, $\left(e^{i t A}\right)_{t>0}$ gives a strongly continuous contraction semigroup $e^{i t A}: \sum_{n \in \mathbf{Z}} a_{n} e^{i n \theta} \mapsto e^{-t} \sum_{n \in \mathbf{Z}} a_{n} e^{-|n| t} e^{i n \theta}$. For comparison, the Poisson semigroup is $P_{r}: \sum_{n \in \mathbf{Z}} a_{n} e^{i n \theta} \mapsto \sum_{n \in \mathbf{Z}} a_{n} r^{|n|} e^{i n \theta}$, so $e^{i t A}=e^{-t} P_{e^{-t}}$ for $t>0$.
Definition (Periodic linear system). (i) Let $\left(e^{-x A}\right)_{x \in \mathbf{R}}$ be a strongly continuous group of operators on $H$ such that $e^{2 \pi A}=I$ and $A$ is invertible. Suppose further that $E$ is trace class operators on $H$, and that $B: H_{0} \rightarrow H$ and $C: H \rightarrow H_{0}$ are bounded linear operators, such that $A E+E A=B C$ and either $B$ is trace class, or $B$ and $C$ are Hilbert-Schmidt. Then $\Sigma_{\infty}=(-A, B, C ; E)$ is a periodic linear system with input and output space $H_{0}$ and state space $H$. (Unlike in Theorem 2.2, we generally take $H=H_{0}$ so the linear system has infinitely many inputs and outputs.)
(ii) Moreover, if $\left(e^{-x A}\right)_{x \in \mathbf{R}}$ is uniformly continuous, or equivalently $A \in \mathcal{L}(H)$, we say that $(-A, B, C ; E)$ is a uniform periodic linear system.
(iii) The $\tau$ function of $\Sigma_{\infty}$ is $\tau(x)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+e^{-x A} E e^{-x A}\right)$; then let $u(x)=-2 \frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \log \tau_{\infty}(x)$ be the potential.
(iv) Let $\Phi(x)=C e^{-x A} B$ be the operator scattering function so that $\phi(x)=\operatorname{trace} \Phi(x)$ is the (scalar) scattering function.
(v) Let $R_{x}=e^{-x A} E e^{-x A}$, then we introduce $F_{x}=\left(I+e^{-x A} E e^{-x A}\right)^{-1}$.
(vi) Let $\operatorname{Spec}(A)$ be the spectrum of $A$ as an operator in $H$, let $\mathbf{P}=\mathbf{C} \cup\{\infty\}$ be the Riemann sphere and introduce the periodic linear system

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Sigma_{\lambda}=\left(-A,(\lambda I+A)(\lambda I-A)^{-1} B, C ;(\lambda I+A)(\lambda I-A)^{-1} E\right) \quad(\lambda \in \mathbf{P} \backslash \operatorname{Spec}(A)) \tag{6.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and its accompanying tau function $\tau_{\lambda}$.
(vii) We also introduce the (non commutative) algebra $\mathcal{S}=\mathbf{C}\left\{I, A, B C, F_{x}\right\}$, and then let $\mathcal{A}$ be the subring of $\mathcal{S}$ spanned by $A^{n_{1}}$ and by the ordered products $A^{n_{1}} F A^{n_{2}} \ldots F A^{n_{r}}$ for $n_{j} \in \mathbf{N}$.
Definition (Bracket and $*$ product). (i) As in Lemma 4.1, we introduce on $\mathcal{S}$ the product $*$ and derivation $\partial$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
P * Q=P(A F+F A-2 F A F) Q, \quad \partial P=A(I-2 F) P+\frac{d P}{d x}+P(I-2 F) A \tag{6.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) We also introduce the bracket $\lfloor\rfloor:. \mathcal{S} \rightarrow \mathcal{M}\left(\mathcal{L}^{1}(H)\right)$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lfloor P\rfloor=C e^{-x A} F P F e^{-x A} B \tag{6.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) Let $\lfloor\mathcal{A}\rfloor=\{\lfloor P\rfloor: P \in \mathcal{A}\}$ and $\Theta=\{P \in \mathcal{A}$ : trace $\lfloor P\rfloor=0\}$, which is a linear subspace, and not necessarily a ring. Then $\mathcal{A} / \Theta=\{\operatorname{trace}\lfloor P\rfloor: P \in \mathcal{A}\}$, so that $\mathcal{A} / \Theta$ is analogous to the differential ring generated by the potential $u$.
Theorem 6.3. Let $(-A, B, C ; E)$ be a uniform periodic linear system.
(i) Then $\tau_{\lambda}(x)$ is holomorphic except at finitely many singularities; so $x \mapsto \tau_{\lambda}(x)$ is entire, while $\lambda \mapsto \tau_{\lambda}(x)$ is holomorphic on $\mathbf{P} \backslash \operatorname{Spec}(A)$;
(ii) there is a homomorphism of complex differential rings $(\mathcal{A}, *, \partial) \rightarrow \mathbf{M}_{\mathbf{C}}\left(\mathcal{L}\left(H_{0}\right)\right)$ given by $X \mapsto\lfloor X\rfloor$;
(iii) the potential $u$ is meromorphic and $\pi$-periodic on $\mathbf{C}$ and belongs to $\mathcal{A} / \Theta$.
(iv) Also, let $T(x, y)=-C e^{-x A} F_{x} e^{-y A} B$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial x^{2}} T(x, y)-\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial y^{2}} T(x, y)=-2\left(\frac{d}{d x} T(x, x)\right) T(x, y) \tag{6.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $u(x)=-2 \frac{d}{d x} \operatorname{trace} T(x, x)$.
Proof. (i) First we show that $A$ is an algebraic operator. By periodicity, the group $\left(e^{-x A}\right)_{x \in \mathbf{R}}$ is bounded and hence by Sz.-Nagy's theorem, $e^{x A}$ is similar to a unitary group on $H$, so $A$ is similar to a skew symmetric operator. By uniform continuity, $A$ is bounded, and hence has spectrum contained in $\{-i N, \ldots, i N\}$ for some integer $N$; see [21]. Consequently, there exists a monic polynomial $p$ such that $p(A)=0$. As in Proposition $4.5, C e^{-x A} B$ satisfies a linear differential equation with constant coefficients.

Hence $A$ is an invertible algebraic operator, so as in (4.21), $A^{-1}$ is a polynomial in $A$ and $(\lambda I+A)(\lambda I-A)^{-1} \in \mathcal{S}$ for all $\lambda$ in the resolvent set of $A$. Observe that $(\lambda I+A)(\lambda I-A)^{-1}$ is a polynomial in $A$ with coefficients that are rational functions of $\lambda$, and holomorphic except when $\lambda$ is in the spectrum of $A$; in particular it is holomorphic on $\{\lambda:|\lambda|<1\} \cup\{\lambda:|\lambda|>\|A\|\}$.

We also introduce polynomials $p_{j}$ for each point in the spectrum of $A$ such that $p_{j}(i k)=$ $\delta_{j k}$ for $k=-N, \ldots, N$, and since $A$ is similar to a skew operator, we deduce that

$$
\begin{equation*}
e^{-x A}=\sum_{j=-N ; j \neq 0}^{N} p_{j}(A) e^{-i j x} \tag{6.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence $\tau_{\lambda}$ is a holomorphic function of $\lambda$, except at $\lambda \in \operatorname{Spec}(A)$, which is a finite set.
(ii) First we check that $(\mathcal{S}, *, \partial)$ is a complex differential ring for $(-A, B, C ; E)$ and for $\Sigma_{\lambda}$. By (4.19), the operator $E$ belongs to $\mathcal{S}$ and hence by (6.10) $R_{x}=e^{-x A} E e^{-x A}$ also belongs to $\mathcal{S}$. Hence we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d x} R_{x}=-e^{-x A} A E e^{-x A}-e^{-x A} E A e^{-x A}=-e^{-x A} B C e^{-x A} . \tag{6.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

By the Riesz theory of compact operators, $F_{x}$ is a meromorphic operator-valued function of $x$, and so $A F+F A-2 F A F=F e^{-x A} B C e^{-x A} F$, hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d F}{d x}=A F+F A-2 F A F \tag{6.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial(P * Q)=(\partial P) * Q+P *(\partial Q) \tag{6.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

thus $(\mathcal{S}, *, \partial)$ is a differential ring. Moreover $\lfloor\rfloor:.(\mathcal{S}, *, \partial) \rightarrow(\mathcal{S}, \cdot, d / d x)$ is a homomorphism of differential rings, in the sense that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d x}\lfloor P\rfloor=\lfloor\partial P\rfloor, \quad\lfloor P\rfloor\lfloor Q\rfloor=\lfloor P * Q\rfloor . \tag{6.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that $\mathcal{A}$ is a subring of $\mathcal{S}$, and hence $\lfloor\mathcal{A}\rfloor$ is also a differential ring.
(iii) Since $e^{-x A}$ is an entire operator function, we deduce that $\tau_{\infty}$ is entire, and $\pi$ periodic since $\tau_{\infty}(x)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+e^{2 x A} E\right)$ and $e^{2 \pi A}=I$. When $\tau_{\infty}(x) \neq 0$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d}{d x} \log \operatorname{det}\left(I+e^{-x A} E e^{-x A}\right) & =-\operatorname{trace}\left(\left(I+e^{-x A} E e^{-x A}\right)^{-1} e^{-x A}(A E+E A) e^{-x A}\right) \\
& =-\operatorname{trace}\left(\left(I+e^{-x A} E e^{-x A}\right)^{-1} e^{-x A} B C e^{-x A}\right) \\
& =-\operatorname{trace}\left(C e^{-x A}\left(I+e^{-x A} E e^{-x A}\right)^{-1} e^{-x A} B\right) \\
& =-\operatorname{trace}\left(C e^{-x A} F e^{-x A} B\right), \tag{6.15}
\end{align*}
$$

and hence

$$
\begin{align*}
u & =-2 \frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \log \operatorname{det}\left(I+e^{-x A} E e^{-x A}\right) \\
& =-4 \text { trace } C e^{-x A} F A F e^{-x A} B \\
& =-4 \text { trace }\lfloor A\rfloor \tag{6.16}
\end{align*}
$$

so $u$ belongs to $\mathcal{A}_{0}=\{$ trace $\lfloor P\rfloor: P \in \mathcal{A}\}$. Likewise, the derivatives $u^{(j)}$ belong to $\mathbf{A}_{0}$ since $\lfloor\mathcal{A}\rfloor$ is a differential ring.
(iv) By repeated differentiation, we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial x^{2}} T(x, y)=-C e^{-x A}\left(F A^{2}-4 F A F A-4 F A^{2} F+8 F A F A F\right) e^{-y A} B \\
\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial y^{2}} T(x, y)=-C e^{-x A}\left(F A^{2}\right) e^{-y A} B \tag{6.17}
\end{gather*}
$$

while the Lyapunov equation gives

$$
\begin{align*}
-2\left(\frac{d}{d x} T(x, x)\right) T(x, y) & =4 C e^{-x A} F A F c^{-x A} B C e^{-x A} F e^{-y A} B \\
& =4 C e^{-x A} F A(A F+F A-2 F A F) e^{-y A} B \tag{6.18}
\end{align*}
$$

hence the result. In [12, Lemma 7.2] we obtained a variant of this formula via an integral equation in the style of Gelfand-Levitan, under special commutativity conditions.

Definition (Solutions of Hill's equation). (i) Let $u \in C^{2}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{C})$ be $\pi$-periodic, and consider Hill's equation in the form

$$
\frac{d}{d x}\left[\begin{array}{c}
\psi  \tag{6.19}\\
\psi^{\prime}
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1 \\
u(x)-\lambda & 0
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{c}
\psi \\
\psi^{\prime}
\end{array}\right] .
$$

Let $F_{\lambda}(x)$ be the fundamental solution matrix, and $\Delta(\lambda)=\operatorname{trace}\left(F_{\lambda}(\pi)\right)$ the discriminant.
(ii) The multiplier curve is $\mathcal{E}=\left\{\mathbf{p}=(\lambda, \rho): \rho^{2}-\Delta(\lambda) \rho+1=0\right\}$, as in [22].
(iii) A Floquet solution consists of a nonzero function $f$ such that $-f^{\prime \prime}(x)+q(x) f(x)=$ $\lambda f(x)$ and $f(x+\pi)=\rho f(x)$ for some $\lambda$. We call $\lambda$ the eigenvalue and $\rho$ the multiplier, and $(\lambda, \rho)$ lies on $\mathcal{E}$.
(iv) In particular, when $\rho=1$, we say that $f$ is periodic, and when $\rho=-1$, we say that $f$ is anti periodic. Then $(\lambda, \pm 1)$ is a branch point on $\mathcal{E}$.
(v) Suppose that $u$ is real-valued; then $L=-d^{2} / d x^{2}+u$ is essentially self-adjoint. The Bloch spectrum of Schrödinger's operator consists of those $\lambda \in \mathbf{C}$ such that there exists a nontrivial and bounded solution $f$ of $-f^{\prime \prime}+u f=\lambda f$. Real potentials are said to belong to the same spectral equivalence class if their multiplier curves are equal. See [47, 50].
(vi) The Dirichlet eigenvalues $\left(\mu_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{\infty}$ are the $\mu$ such that

$$
\begin{gather*}
-y^{\prime \prime}(x ; \mu)+u(x) y(x, \mu)=\mu y(x ; \mu) \\
y(0 ; \mu)=0=y(\pi ; \mu) \tag{6.20}
\end{gather*}
$$

has a nontrivial solution. Replacing $u(x)$ by $u(x+t)$ we obtain the Dirichlet eigenvalues $\left(\mu_{j}(t)\right)_{j=1}^{\infty}$.

The following result is related to results from Brett's thesis [13], and relates to the case in which the Gelfand-Levitan equation is scalar-valued, as in Proposition 3.1 and [27]. Given a periodic linear system $(-A, B, C)$, we introduce

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{x}=\int_{0}^{x} e^{-t A} B C e^{t A} d t, \quad V_{x}=\int_{0}^{x} e^{t A} B C e^{t A} d t \tag{6.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

which satisfy the Lyapunov equation

$$
\frac{d}{d x}\left[\begin{array}{cc}
V & 0  \tag{6.22}\\
0 & S
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
A & 0 \\
0 & -A
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
V & 0 \\
0 & S
\end{array}\right]+\left[\begin{array}{cc}
V & 0 \\
0 & S
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{cc}
A & 0 \\
0 & A
\end{array}\right]+\left[\begin{array}{cc}
B C & 0 \\
0 & B C
\end{array}\right]
$$

Let $W_{x}=V_{x}-S_{x}$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
L(x, y)=-C e^{x A}\left(I+W_{x}\right)^{-1}\left(e^{y A}-e^{-y A}\right) B \tag{6.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

then let $Z_{x}=V_{x}+S_{x}$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
K(x, y)=-C e^{x A}\left(I+Z_{x}\right)^{-1}\left(e^{y A}+e^{-y A}\right) B \tag{6.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition 6.4. Let $(-A, B, C)$ be a periodic linear system with $H_{0}=\mathbf{C}$ such that $\phi(x)=$ $C e^{x A} B$ is even and suppose there exist $E, E_{-} \in \mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$ such that $A E+E A=B C$ and $-A E_{-}+E_{-} A=B C$.
(i) Then the potential $w(x)=-2 \frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \log \operatorname{det}\left(I+W_{x}\right)$ is periodic, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(x)=\frac{\sin k x}{k}+\int_{0}^{x} L(x, y) \frac{\sin k y}{k} d y \tag{6.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

satisfies

$$
\begin{array}{r}
-\varphi^{\prime \prime}(x)+w(x) \varphi(x)=k^{2} \varphi(x) \\
\varphi(0)=0, \quad \varphi^{\prime}(0)=1 \tag{6.26}
\end{array}
$$

(ii) Also the potential $u(x)=-2 \frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \log \operatorname{det}\left(I+Z_{x}\right)$ is periodic and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(x)=\cos k x+\int_{0}^{x} K(x, y) \cos k y d y \tag{6.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

satisfies

$$
\begin{align*}
& -\psi^{\prime \prime}(x)+u(x) \psi(x)=k^{2} \psi(x) \\
& \psi(0)=1, \quad \psi^{\prime}(0)=-2 C B . \tag{6.28}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. (i) We have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{det}\left(I+W_{x}\right)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+e^{x A} E e^{x A}-e^{-x A} E_{-} e^{x A}-E+E_{-}\right) \tag{6.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is periodic. Also, $L(x, 0)=0$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
L(x, x)=-\frac{d}{d x} \log \operatorname{det}\left(I+W_{x}\right) \tag{6.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

One can verify that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi(x+y)-\phi(x-y)+L(x, y)+\int_{0}^{x} L(x, t)(\phi(t+y)-\phi(t-y)) d t=0 . \tag{6.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

and with $w(x)=2 \frac{d}{d x} L(x, x)$, we deduce that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial^{2} L}{\partial x^{2}}-\frac{\partial^{2} L}{\partial y^{2}}=w(x) L(x, y) \tag{6.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

and by manipulating the Gelfand-Levitan equation, one deduces the differential equation for $\varphi$.
(iii) We have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{det}\left(I+Z_{x}\right)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+e^{x A} E e^{x A}+e^{-x A} E_{-} e^{x A}-E-E_{-}\right), \tag{6.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is periodic, with $\frac{\partial}{\partial y} K(x, 0)=0$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
K(x, x)=-\frac{d}{d x} \log \operatorname{det}\left(I+Z_{x}\right) \tag{6.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then we verify that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi(x+y)+\phi(x-y)+K(x, y)+\int_{0}^{x} K(x, t)(\phi(t+y)+\phi(t-y)) d t=0 \tag{6.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

and with $u(x)=2 \frac{d}{d x} K(x, x)$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial^{2} K}{\partial x^{2}}-\frac{\partial^{2} K}{\partial y^{2}}=u(x) K(x, y) \tag{6.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

then by manipulating the Gelfand-Levitan equation, one deduces the differential equation for $\psi$.

Given Proposition 6.4, it is tempting to seek a version of Proposition 6.1 for periodic linear systems, and try to express the general solution of Hill's equation in terms of quotients of tau functions of periodic linear systems. The following result indicates the restriction that must be imposed upon $u$ for such a representation to be valid.
Proposition 6.5. Suppose that $\Sigma=(-A, B, C ; E)$ is a uniformly periodic linear system with $H_{0}=H$ such that for all but finitely many $\lambda \in \mathbf{C}$, Hill's equation has a pair of linearly independent solutions of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{\lambda}(x)=e^{\nu x} \prod_{j=1}^{n} \frac{\tau_{\zeta_{j}}\left(x-a_{j}\right)}{\tau_{\eta_{j}}\left(x-b_{j}\right)} \tag{6.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some $\nu, a_{j}, b_{j}, \zeta_{j}, \eta_{k}$ depending upon $\lambda$.
(i) Then $u$ is a Picard potential, in the sense that Hill's equation has a meromorphic general solution for all but finitely many $\lambda \in \mathbf{C}$;
(ii) $u$ is finite gap as a potential for Hill's equation, and there exists a differential operator $P_{2 g+1}$ of order $2 g+1$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{2 g+1}^{2}=\prod_{j=0}^{2 g}\left(L-\lambda_{j}\right) \tag{6.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some $\lambda_{j} \in \mathbf{C}$ such that $\Delta^{2}\left(\lambda_{j}\right)=4$, and the diagonal Greens function $g_{0}$ is discretely dominated and satisfies (5.49).
(iii) Suppose further that $u$ is real-valued. Then the Bloch spectrum of $L$ is associated with a hyperelliptic algebraic complex curve

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{E}_{0}=\left\{(\mu, \lambda) \in \mathbf{C}^{2}: \mu^{2}=\prod_{j=0}^{2 g}\left(\lambda-\lambda_{j}^{o}\right)\right\} \cup\{(\infty, \infty)\} \tag{6.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\lambda_{j}^{o}$ a simple real zero of $\Delta(\lambda)^{2}-4=0$, and such that the $\lambda \in \sigma_{B}$ give real points $(\mu, \lambda)$ on $\mathcal{E}_{0}$.
Proof. (i) In this case $x \mapsto \operatorname{det}\left(I+e^{-x A} E e^{-x A}\right)$ is entire and hence $\psi_{\lambda}$ is meromorphic; hence there exists a meromorphic fundamental system of solutions on $\mathbf{C}$. Since $\tau$ is periodic, we have $\phi_{\lambda}(x+\pi)=e^{\nu \pi} \phi_{\lambda}(x)$, so that $\psi_{\lambda}$ is a Floquet solution with Floquet exponent $\pi \nu$. By choosing a pair of solutions with Floquet exponents $\pm \pi \nu(\lambda)$, we obtain a fundamental solution matrix such that $\Delta(\lambda)=2 \cosh \pi \nu(\lambda)$.
(ii) This is a particular case of the Burchnall-Chaundry theorem, and the required $P_{2 g+1}$ is given in the proof of Proposition 5.5. See [29, Theorem 4.1] for details. Also, for periodic $u \in C^{2}(\mathbf{R}, \mathbf{C})$, Gesztesy and Weikard [29] obtain the formula (4.31) where the $\lambda_{j}$ are the periodic eigenvalues which correspond to periodic solutions of (6.19). The $\mu_{j}(x)$ are referred to as Dirichlet eigenvalues, or tied eigenvalues.
(iii) The set of all $\lambda$ that give $\rho= \pm 1$ is called the periodic spectrum. Such a $u$ has periodic spectrum $\lambda_{0}<\lambda_{1} \leq \lambda_{2}<\lambda_{3} \leq \ldots$, where for $\lambda_{2 j}$ there exists a periodic eigenfunction, while for $\lambda_{2 j+1}$ there exists an anti periodic eigenfunction. We have $\sigma_{B}=\cup_{k=0}^{\infty}\left[\lambda_{2 k}, \lambda_{2 k+1}\right]$, where many of these intervals are abutting. For real $x$, we deduce that just as $\psi_{\lambda}(x)$ in (6.19) has parameters $\nu, a_{j}, \eta_{j}, b_{j}$ and $\eta_{j}$ for $j=1, \ldots, n$ and gives a solution of Hill's equation with $\lambda$, the complex conjugate $\overline{\psi_{\lambda}(x)}$ has parameters $\bar{\nu}, \bar{a}_{j}, \bar{\zeta}_{j}, \bar{b}_{j}$ and $\bar{\eta}_{j}$ for $j=1, \ldots, n$ and hence gives a solution of Hill's equation with $\bar{\lambda}$. We select $\psi_{\lambda}$ with Floquet exponent $\pi \nu$, and $\phi_{\bar{\lambda}}$ with Floquet exponent $\pi \bar{\nu}$, and observe that $\overline{\psi_{\bar{\lambda}}}(x)=\psi_{\lambda}(x)$ as they both solve Hill's equation with $\lambda$ and have the same Floquet exponent $\pi \nu$.

Note that $\tau_{\infty}(x)$ is real and non zero for real $x$, since $x \mapsto u_{\infty}(x): \mathbf{R} \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$ is twice continuously differentiable, and such that Hill's equation has two linearly independent Floquet solutions $\psi_{\lambda}(x)$ for all but finitely many $\zeta$. Then Gesztesy and Weikard proved [31, Theorem 4.1] that $u_{\infty}(x)$ is finite gap, and hence that the discriminant equation $\Delta(\lambda)^{2}-4=0$ has only finitely many zeros that are simple, namely $\lambda_{0}^{o}<\ldots<\lambda_{2 g}^{o}$. Hence the Bloch spectrum is $\cup_{j=0}^{g-1}\left[\lambda_{2 j}^{0}, \lambda_{2 j+1}^{o}\right] \cup\left[\lambda_{2 g}^{o}, \infty\right)$ and each point in the interior of this union of real intervals corresponds to a pair of real points on the curve $\mathcal{E}$.

Example 6.6. Let $u \in C^{2}(\mathbf{R} ; \mathbf{R})$ be a finite gap Hill's potential. Here the fundamental solution matrix is real for all $\lambda \in \mathbf{R}$, hence $\Delta(\lambda) \in \mathbf{R}$ for all $\lambda \in \mathbf{R}$. Hochstadt observed that the simple periodic spectrum $\left(\lambda_{j}^{o}\right)$ determines the double periodic spectrum and the nontrivial roots $\lambda_{j}^{\prime}$ of $\Delta^{\prime}(\lambda)=0$, so we can write

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\Delta^{\prime}(\lambda)}{\sqrt{4-\Delta(\lambda)^{2}}}=c_{3} \frac{\prod_{j=1}^{g}\left(\lambda-\lambda_{j}^{\prime}\right)}{\sqrt{\prod_{j=0}^{2 g}\left(\lambda-\lambda_{j}^{o}\right)}} . \tag{6.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

McKean and van Moerbecke [50] proved that the set of potentials with simple periodic spectrum $\lambda_{0}^{0}<\ldots<\lambda_{2 g}^{o}$ gives a $2^{g}$ sheeted cover of the cell $\left[\lambda_{1}^{0}, \lambda_{2}^{o}\right] \times \ldots \times\left[\lambda_{2 g-1}^{o}, \lambda_{2 g}^{o}\right]$ in which the Dirichlet spectrum lives. We select one such potential $q$ such that $\mu_{j}=\lambda_{j}^{\prime}$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi(\lambda)=\cos ^{-1} \frac{\Delta(\lambda)}{2}=-\int_{0}^{\lambda} \frac{\Delta^{\prime}(\zeta) d \zeta}{\sqrt{4-\Delta(\zeta)^{2}}} \tag{6.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

gives a conformal mapping from the upper half plane $\{\lambda: \Im \lambda>0\}$ to a slit domain, as in Proposition 5.8.

## 7. Linear systems on the complex torus, and the hyperelliptic prime function

In this section, we show that there are significant examples of periodic linear systems which satisfy the hypotheses of the previous section. In order to give explicit formulas, we do not seek the greatest generality in the presentation. We start with genus one, for which our results are most complete, and then progress to hyperelliptic cases.

Definition (Elliptic functions). (i) For $\omega_{1}, \omega_{2} \in \mathbf{C} \backslash\{0\}$ with $\Im\left(\omega_{2} / \omega_{1}\right)>0$ uppose let $\Lambda=\mathbf{Z} 2 \omega_{1}+\mathbf{Z} 2 w_{2}$ be a lattice, and let $\mathcal{T}=\mathbf{C} / \Lambda$ be the corresponding torus. A meromorphic function on $\mathbf{C}$ is elliptic (of the first kind) if it is doubly periodic with respect to $\Lambda$. A meromorphic function is elliptic of the second kind if there exist multipliers $\rho_{j} \in \mathbf{C}$ such that $f\left(z+2 \omega_{j}\right)=\rho_{j} f(z)$; so that $f$ is quasi-periodic with respect to $\Lambda$. A meromorphic function is elliptic of the third kind if there exist $a_{j}, b_{j} \in \mathbf{C}$ for $j=1,2$ such that $f\left(z+2 \omega_{j}\right)=e^{a_{j} z+b_{j}} f(z)$. See [43, 49].
(ii) Let $\omega \in \mathbf{C}$ have $\Im \omega>0$; then Jacobi's elliptic theta function is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\vartheta_{1}(x \mid \omega)=i \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty}(-1)^{n} e^{(2 n-1) \pi i x+(n+1 / 2)^{2} \pi i \omega} \quad(x \in \mathbf{C}) \tag{7.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is elliptic of the third kind on with respect to $\mathbf{Z}+\omega \mathbf{Z}$.
Lemma 7.1. (i) Let $\delta$ be a positive divisor on $\mathbf{C} / \Lambda$. Then there exists a uniformly periodic linear system with tau function $\tau$, where $\tau$ is elliptic of the third kind with zero divisor $\delta$.
(ii) Let $\eta$ be a divisor on $\mathbf{C} / \Lambda$ of degree zero. Then there exists a pair of uniformly periodic linear systems with tau functions $\tau_{0}$ and $\tau_{1}$ such that $\tau_{1} / \tau_{0}$ is elliptic of the second kind with $\eta$ the divisor of its poles and zeros.
(iii) Let $\gamma=\sum_{j=1}^{n} \delta_{a_{j}}-\sum_{j=1}^{n} \delta_{b_{j}}$ be a divisor of degree zero, where $\sum_{j=1}^{n}\left(a_{j}-b_{j}\right) \in \Lambda$. Then there exists a pair of uniformly periodic linear systems with tau functions $\tau_{1}$ and $\tau_{0}$ such that $\tau_{1} / \tau_{0}$ is elliptic of the first kind with $\gamma$ the divisor of the poles and zeros.
Proof (i) We introduce $\mathrm{q}=e^{\pi i \omega}$ and introduce Jacobi's elliptic function of the third kind by the product

$$
\begin{equation*}
\vartheta_{3}(x)=\prod_{n=1}^{\infty}\left(1-\mathrm{q}^{2 n}\right) \prod_{n=1}^{\infty}\left(1+2 \mathrm{q}^{2 n-1} \cos 2 \pi x+\mathrm{q}^{4 n-2}\right) \tag{7.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Observing that

$$
\operatorname{det}\left(\left[\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0  \tag{7.3}\\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right]+\mathrm{q}^{2 n-1}\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\cos 2 \pi x & \sin 2 \pi x \\
-\sin 2 \pi x & \cos 2 \pi x
\end{array}\right]\right)=1+2 \mathrm{q}^{2 n-1} \cos 2 \pi x+\mathrm{q}^{4 n-2}
$$

one introduces

$$
A_{n}=C_{n}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
0 & \pi  \tag{7.4}\\
-\pi & 0
\end{array}\right], \quad B_{n}=2 E_{n}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\mathrm{q}^{2 n-1} & 0 \\
0 & \mathrm{q}^{2 n-1}
\end{array}\right]
$$

so that $A_{n} E_{n}+E_{n} A_{n}=B_{n} C_{n}$. By forming the direct sum $\bigoplus_{n=1}^{\infty}\left(A_{n}, B_{n}, C_{n} ; E_{n}\right)$ can easily construct a linear system $(-A, B, C ; E)$ with $H=H_{0}=\oplus_{n-1}^{\infty} \mathbf{C}^{2 \times 1}$ that generates a uniform periodic semigroup and with tau function $\vartheta_{3}(x) / c$ for $c=\prod_{n=1}^{\infty}\left(1-\mathrm{q}^{2 n}\right)$.

We then introduce $\vartheta_{1}(x)=-i e^{\pi i x} \mathrm{q}^{1 / 4} \vartheta_{3}(x+\omega / 2+1 / 2)$. By simple manipulations of (7.22), one shows that $\vartheta_{1}$ is entire and elliptic of the third kind, and from the product formula it is evident that $\vartheta_{1}$ has a simple zero at $x=0$ and no others in the fundamental cell of $\mathbf{C} / \Lambda$. In section 7 of [11] we likewise obtained a uniform periodic linear system with tau function $\vartheta_{1}(x)$.

Given a positive divisor $\delta=\sum_{j=1}^{n} \delta_{a_{j}}$, we can form block diagonal sums, and obtain a periodic linear system with tau function $\tau_{0}(x)=\prod_{j=1}^{n} \vartheta_{1}\left(x-a_{j}\right)$, so $\tau_{0}$ is elliptic of the third kind with simple zeros at $a_{1}, \ldots, a_{j}$ and the points congruent to these with respect to $\Lambda$.
(ii) Given $\eta=\sum_{j} \delta_{a_{j}}-\sum_{k} \delta_{b_{k}}$, we introduce periodic linear systems with tau functions $\tau_{1}$ and $\tau_{0}$ as in (i) so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\tau_{0}(x)}{\tau_{1}(x)}=\prod_{j=1}^{n} \frac{\vartheta_{1}\left(x-a_{j}\right)}{\vartheta_{1}\left(x-b_{j}\right)} \tag{7.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

is elliptic of the second kind with zeros $a_{1}, \ldots, a_{n}$ and poles $b_{1}, \ldots, b_{n}$ listed according to multiplicity modulo $\Lambda$.
(iii) In the particular case of (ii) in which $\sum_{j=1}^{n}\left(a_{j}-b_{j}\right) \in \Lambda$, then $\tau_{0} / \tau_{1}$ is elliptic of the first kind, as in Abel's theorem.

Proposition 7.2. Suppose that $u$ is elliptic of the first kind, and that Hill's equation $-\psi^{\prime \prime}(x)+$ $u(x) \psi(x)=\lambda \psi(x)$ has a meromorphic fundamental system of solutions for some $\lambda \in \mathbf{C}$. Then Hill's equation has a nontrivial elliptic solution of the second kind, which may be expressed as a quotient of tau functions that arise from uniformly periodic linear systems and systems with finite-dimensional state space.
Proof. The first part is conventionally attributed to Picard. Let $V_{\lambda}$ be the vector space of meromorphic solutions of Hill's equation, and suppose that $V_{\lambda}$ has dimension two. Observe that the monodromy operators $T_{j}: \psi(z) \mapsto \psi\left(z+2 \omega_{j}\right)$ are commuting operators such that $T_{j}\left(V_{\lambda}\right) \subseteq V_{\lambda}$ for $j=1,2$ since $u$ is elliptic, so we can take $\Lambda$ to be the group generated by $T_{1}$ and $T_{2}$. Then $T_{1}$ and $T_{2}$ have a common eigenvector, which gives an elliptic solution of the second kind. (Furthermore, if $T_{1}$ or $T_{2}$ has distinct eigenvalues as an operator on $V_{\lambda}$, then there exists a fundamental system of elliptic functions of the second kind; in particular, this happens for $T_{1}$ when $\Delta(\lambda)^{2}-4 \neq 0$.)

Let $\psi$ be a solution that is elliptic of the second kind hence has the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(x)=e^{b x+c} \frac{\prod_{j=1}^{n} \vartheta_{1}\left(x-a_{j}\right)}{\prod_{j=1}^{n} \vartheta_{1}\left(x-b_{j}\right)} . \tag{7.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

The initial exponential factor $e^{b x+c}$ is the tau function of a linear system with state space $\mathbf{C}$, while the quotient of $\vartheta_{1}$ functions can be realized from a pair of uniformly periodic linear systems by Lemma 7.1.

Example 7.3. (Lamé's equation). (i) By [49, page 132] there exists a constant $e_{2}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\wp(x)=e_{2}+\left(\frac{\vartheta_{1}^{\prime}(0) \vartheta_{3}(x)}{\vartheta_{1}(x) \vartheta_{3}(0)}\right)^{2}, \tag{7.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where Weierstrass's function $\wp$ is meromorphic and doubly periodic with respect to $\mathbf{Z}+\omega \mathbf{Z}$.
The fundamental example of a finite gap elliptic differential equation is Lamé's equation. Let $(X, Z)=\left(\wp(x), \wp^{\prime}(x)\right)$ and $(Y, W)=\left(\wp(y), \wp^{\prime}(y)\right)$ be points on the elliptic curve $\mathcal{T}=$ $\left\{(X, Z): Z^{2}=4 X^{3}-g_{2} X-g_{3}\right\} \cup\{(\infty, \infty)\}$, where $g_{2}^{3}-27 g_{3}^{2} \neq 0$, with Klein's invariant $J=g_{2}^{3} /\left(g_{2}^{3}-27 g_{3}^{2}\right)$, and $\mathbf{K}=\mathbf{C}(X)[Z]$ is the elliptic function field. Then Lamé's equation is

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \psi(x)+\ell(\ell+1) \wp(x) \psi(x)=\lambda \psi(x) \tag{7.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

and we write $\Psi(X)=\psi(x)$ to convert between coordinates on the curve and the torus. See [44] for a detailed discussion of various forms of the solutions.

To solve the case $\ell=1$, we introduce

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{2}(x, \alpha)=-2 q^{1 / 4} e^{\left(\zeta(\alpha)-2 \alpha \eta_{1} / \pi\right) x} \frac{\vartheta_{1}(x-\alpha)}{\vartheta_{1}(\alpha) \vartheta_{1}(x)} \prod_{n=1}^{\infty}\left(1-q^{2 n}\right)^{3} \tag{7.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

which satisfies Lamé's equation with $\lambda=-\wp(\alpha)$ and is such that $\alpha \mapsto \psi_{2}(x, \alpha)$ is doubly periodic and meromorphic, and $x \mapsto \psi_{2}(x, \alpha)$ is elliptic of the second kind; moreover $\psi_{2}(x, \alpha) \psi_{2}(-x, \alpha)=\wp(\alpha)-\wp(x)$. By Lemma 7.1, $\psi_{2}(x, \alpha)$ can be expressed as a quotient of tau functions from periodic linear systems.
(ii) The Lamé example is fundamental, since several elementary examples can be derived from it. In each of the following, $\gamma$ and the potential $u$ are meromorphic functions on a Riemann surface $\mathcal{E}$ and $\psi$ satisfies the addition rule

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(x+y)=\frac{\psi^{\prime}(x) \psi(y)-\psi(x) \psi^{\prime}(y)}{\gamma(x)-\gamma(y)} \tag{7.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

and each entry can be obtained from periodic linear systems by taking a limit of the real or imaginary period to infinity.

$$
\begin{array}{ccccc}
\mathcal{E} & u(x) & \psi(x) & \gamma(x) & \tau(x) \\
\mathbf{P}^{1} & g(g+1) / x^{2} & (g+1) / x & -(g+1) / x^{2} & x^{g(g+1) / 2}  \tag{7.11}\\
\mathbf{C} / \pi \mathbf{Z} & g(g+1) \operatorname{cosec}^{2} x & (g+1) \cot x & -(g+1) \operatorname{cosec}^{2} x & (\sin x)^{g(g+1) / 2} \\
\mathbf{C} / \pi i \mathbf{Z} & g(g+1) \operatorname{cosech}^{2} x & (g+1) \operatorname{coth} x & -(g+1) \operatorname{cosech}^{2} x & (\sinh x)^{g(g+1) / 2} \\
\mathbf{C} / \Lambda & 2 \wp(x \mid \Lambda) & \psi_{2}(x, \alpha) & -\wp(x \mid \Lambda) & \vartheta_{1}(x \mid \Lambda)
\end{array}
$$

Lemma 7.1 extends to symmetric compact Riemann surfaces of genus $g \geq 2$ via the Schottky-Klein function $\varpi$, which depends upon the Schottky's model for $\mathcal{E}$. In Schottky's model, $\mathcal{E}$ arises as the quotient of $\mathbf{C}_{\infty}=\mathbf{C} \cup\{\infty\}$ under the action of a discrete subgroup of $\operatorname{PSL}(2, \mathbf{C})$. A Riemann surface $\mathcal{E}$ is said to be symmetric if there exists an anti-conformal
involution $\varphi: \mathcal{E} \rightarrow \mathcal{E}$. Whereas the defining formula for $\varpi$ does not seem well adapted for computation, Crowdy et al [5,17, 18,70] have recently devised algorithms which facilitate computing $\varpi$ in geometrical contexts which arise in applied mathematics.
Example 7.4 (Schottky's model). To each $T \in P S L(2, \mathbf{C})$, we associate the Möbius transformation

$$
T=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
a & b  \tag{7.12}\\
c & d
\end{array}\right]: z \mapsto \frac{a z+b}{c z+d} .
$$

In particular, each $T \in P S L(2, \mathbf{R})$ gives a Möbius transformation which preserves $\mathbf{R} \cup\{\infty\}$, and is said to be Fuchsian. Let $\hat{\gamma}_{0}$ be the unit circle $C(0,1)$, and let $\hat{\gamma}_{j}$ for $j=1, \ldots, g$ be Jordan curves inside $\hat{\gamma}_{0}$ which are mutually exterior to one another. Let $\varphi$ be the anti conformal involution of $\mathbf{C}_{\infty}$ consisting of reflection in $\hat{\gamma}_{0}$, as in $\varphi(z)=1 / \bar{z}$ then we obtain $\hat{\gamma}_{-j}$ by reflecting $\hat{\gamma}_{j}$ in $\hat{\gamma}_{0}$ via $\varphi$ so $\hat{\gamma}_{-j}$ are Jordan curves in the exterior of $\hat{\gamma}_{0}$; then $\hat{\gamma}_{ \pm 1}, \ldots, \hat{\gamma}_{ \pm g}$ are mutually exterior. The fundamental region is the set $\mathcal{F}$ which is exterior to all the $2 g$ Jordan curves $\hat{\gamma}_{ \pm j}$ for $j=1, \ldots, g$, so $\mathcal{F}$ has $2 g$ holes, and comes equipped with the anti conformal involution $\varphi$. Let $\hat{T}_{j} \in P S L(2, \mathbf{C})$ map $\gamma_{j}$ to $\hat{\gamma}_{-j}$ and the exterior of $\hat{\gamma}_{j}$ with respect to $\mathbf{C}_{\infty}$ onto the interior of $\hat{\gamma}_{-j}$. Then we introduce the group $\Gamma$ which is generated by $\hat{T}_{j}$ for $j=1, \ldots, g$. Let $D_{0}=D(0,1)$ be the interior of $\hat{\gamma}_{0}$ and $D_{j}$ the interior of $\hat{\gamma}_{j}$ for $j-0, \ldots, g$; then let $D_{\Gamma}=D_{0} \backslash \cup_{j=1}^{g} D_{j}$, so that $D_{\Gamma}$ is a set with $g$ holes. Then we can form the Schottky double of $D_{\Gamma}$ by attaching another copy of $D_{\Gamma}$ to itself along the curves $\gamma_{j}$ for $j=0, \ldots, g$ to form a symmetric Riemann surface $\mathcal{E}$ with genus $g$.

Now we separate off the identity transformation, and pair up all other transformations with their inverses, so there is a partition $\Gamma=\{I\} \cup \bigcup_{k=1}^{\infty}\left\{T_{k}, T_{k}^{-1}\right\}$, where $T_{k}(z)=\left(a_{k} z+\right.$ $\left.b_{k}\right) /\left(c_{k} z+d_{k}\right)$. By classical results summarized in [3], there exists a singular set $E_{0}$ such that $\Gamma$ acts properly discontinuously on $\mathbf{C}_{\infty} \backslash E_{0}$, the set $E_{0}$ is perfect and nowhere dense, and $E_{0}$ has Lebesgue area measure zero. Given any relatively compact domain $D^{\prime}$ contained in $\mathbf{C}_{\infty} \backslash E_{0}$, there exist only finitely many points $-d_{k} / c_{k} \in D^{\prime}$; hence there exists a nonempty domain $D^{\prime \prime} \subset D^{\prime}$ such that $D^{\prime \prime}$ does not contain $-d_{k} / c_{k}$ or $\infty$.
Definition (Prime function). Suppose momentarily that the following product converges for some $z, \zeta \in D^{\prime \prime}$; then the product defines the Schottky-Klein prime function of $\mathcal{E}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varpi(z, \zeta)=(z-\zeta) \prod_{k=1}^{\infty} \frac{z-T_{k}(\zeta)}{z-T_{k}(z)} \frac{\zeta-T_{k}(z)}{\zeta-T_{k}(\zeta)} \tag{7.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Each factor in this product is a cross-ratio, hence does not change when $T_{k}$ is replaced by $T_{k}^{-1}$. We write $T_{-k}=T_{k}^{-1}$ for $k=1,2, \ldots$. See [7, Chapter 7] for other functional relations.
Proposition 7.5. Suppose that $\Gamma$ is a non elementary Fuchsian group such that the limit set is a proper subset of $\mathbf{R}$, and let $\zeta_{0} \in \mathcal{F}$ have $\Im \zeta_{0}>0$. Then there exists a sequence of uniformly periodic linear systems $\Sigma_{k}$ with tau functions $\tau_{k}$, and a constant $c_{1}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\varpi\left(e^{i \theta}, \zeta_{0}\right)}{\varpi\left(e^{i \phi}, \zeta_{0}\right)}=c_{1} \prod_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{\tau_{k}(\theta)}{\tau_{k}(\phi)} \tag{7.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Burnside [15] showed that for $\Gamma$ such a Fuchsian group, the series $\sum_{k}\left|c_{k} z+d_{k}\right|^{-2}$ converges for all $\Im z>0$; he referred to such groups as groups of the first class, a terminology which is no longer current. The set of limit points of $\left(T_{k}\left(\zeta_{0}\right)\right)_{k=-\infty}^{\infty}$ is contained in the limit set of $\Gamma$, hence is a proper subset of $\mathbf{R}$. Akaza considered the property

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\left|c_{k}\right|^{2}}<\infty \tag{7.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

and showed that this is equivalent to the absolute and uniform convergence of various Poincare series of dimension ( -2 ), and this property holds in the present context. Hence the series

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k}\left(\frac{1}{T_{k}(s)-z}-\frac{1}{T_{k}(s)-\zeta}\right) T_{k}^{\prime}(s) \tag{7.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

converges for all $s \in D^{\prime \prime}$, and $\zeta, z \in \hat{\gamma}_{0}$, as in Theorem A of [3]. Upon integrating (7.16), and noting Appendix A of [5] we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\prod_{T \in \Gamma} \frac{T\left(\zeta_{0}\right)-z}{T\left(\zeta_{0}\right)-\zeta}=C \frac{\varpi\left(z, \zeta_{0}\right)}{\varpi\left(\zeta, \zeta_{0}\right)} \tag{7.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some constant $C$; we write this as a convergent product

$$
\begin{equation*}
C \frac{\varpi\left(z, \zeta_{0}\right)}{\varpi\left(\zeta, \zeta_{0}\right)}=\prod_{k=1}^{\infty} \frac{\left(a_{k} \zeta_{0}+b_{k}\right)-\left(c_{k} \zeta_{0}+d_{k}\right) z}{\left(a_{k} \zeta_{0}+b_{k}\right)-\left(c_{k} \zeta_{0}+d_{k}\right) \zeta} . \tag{7.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now we introduce a periodic linear system for each $k$, as specified by the matrices

$$
A_{k}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 1  \tag{7.19}\\
-1 & 0
\end{array}\right], \quad E_{k}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\alpha_{k} & \beta_{k} \\
\gamma_{k} & \delta_{k}
\end{array}\right]
$$

with coefficients to be determined. We have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau_{k}(\theta)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+e^{\theta A} E\right)=1+\left(\alpha_{k} \beta_{k}-\gamma_{k} \delta_{k}\right)+\left(\alpha_{k}+\delta_{k}\right) \cos \theta+\left(\gamma_{k}-\beta_{k}\right) \sin \theta \tag{7.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

so we choose complex $\alpha_{k}$ and $\beta_{k}$ to solve the quadratic equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{a_{k} \zeta_{0}+b_{k}}{c_{k} \zeta_{0}+d_{k}}=\frac{1-\alpha_{k}^{2}-\beta_{k}^{2}}{c_{k} \zeta_{0}+d_{k}}-\alpha_{k}+i \beta_{k} \tag{7.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

(for instance, one can choose $\beta_{k}=i \alpha_{k}$ ), then let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta_{k}=-\alpha_{k}-\left(c_{k} \zeta_{0}+d_{k}\right), \quad \gamma_{k}=\beta_{k}-i\left(c_{k} \zeta_{0}+d_{k}\right) \tag{7.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $z=e^{i \theta}$ and $\zeta=e^{i \phi}$ so $z$ and $\zeta$ lie on the circle $\hat{\gamma}_{0}$, which lies inside $\mathcal{F}$, and the product (7.18) converges. The identity (7.14) follows from our choice of $A_{k}$ and $E_{k}$.

Remarks 7.6 (i) Lemma 7.1 is a particular case of Proposition 7.5. When $g=1$ and $\hat{\gamma}_{1}=$ $C(0, \mathrm{q})$ for some $0<\mathrm{q}<1$, the concentric circles $\hat{\gamma}_{1}$ and $\hat{\gamma}_{-1}$ bound an annulus, from which one can construct a model of the torus $\mathbf{C} /\left(\mathbf{Z} 2 \omega_{1}+\mathbf{Z} 2 \omega_{2}\right)$ where $\omega_{1}=\log 1 / \mathrm{q}$ and $\omega_{2}=\pi i$, by identifying points on the inner and outer circles as in [48, p 48]. Here the Schottky-Klein function for the complex torus is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varpi(\zeta, z)=(\zeta-z) \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\left(1-\mathrm{q}^{2}(\zeta / z+z / \zeta)+\mathrm{q}^{4 n}\right)}{\left(1-\mathrm{q}^{2 n}\right)^{2}} \tag{7.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

which strongly resembles the formula for $\vartheta_{3}$ as given in (7.2), and the analogy with the product for $\vartheta_{1}$ is closer still; see [48 p135], and [18]. By contrast, for $g \geq 2$, the universal cover of $\mathcal{E}$ is the hyperbolic upper half plane $\mathbf{C}_{+}$rather than $\mathbf{C}$, and $\Gamma$ is a non abelian group.
(ii) The function $z \mapsto \varpi(z, \zeta)$ is holomorphic and has a first order zero at $z=\zeta$, and no other zeros in $\mathcal{F}$; hence $\varpi(z, \zeta)$ can be used to build meromorphic functions on $\mathcal{E}$ with zeros and poles, subject to Abel's theorem. Baker [7] describes the functional equation of $\varpi$, viewing $z \mapsto \varpi(z, \zeta)$ as an automorphic function with respect to the action of $\Gamma$.
(iii) By Koebe's retrosection theorem, any compact Riemann surface can be uniformized by a Schottky group, as in the preceding discussion, where $\Gamma$ is some discrete subgroup of $P S L(2, \mathbf{C})$. In Proposition 7.5 , we have chosen $\Gamma$ to be a Fuchsian group so as to simplify the geometry and to identify a class of Schottky groups for which the product (7.13) converges; in this case, one can choose the $\hat{\gamma}_{j}$ to be circles with centres on $\mathbf{R}$. The Riemann surface $\mathcal{E}$ is not to be confused with $\mathbf{C}_{+} / \Gamma$. There are alternative definitions of $\varpi$ which avoid the infinite product (7.13); see [5] for an existence theorem for $\varpi$ which is based on potential theory.
(iv) Fay and Mumford $[23,57]$ introduce $\varpi$ via Fay's prime form, and their theory leads naturally to theta functions on the Jacobi variety of $\mathcal{E}$. Let $\mathcal{E}$ be a symmetric compact Riemann surface of genus $g$. Then $\mathcal{E}$ has a prime form $E$, and we suppose that $\varphi: \mathcal{E} \rightarrow \mathcal{E}$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(\varphi(\zeta), \varphi(z))=\overline{E(\zeta, z)} \tag{7.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the Schottky-Klein function $\varpi: \mathcal{E} \times \mathcal{E} \rightarrow \mathbf{C}$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(\zeta, z)=\frac{\varpi(\zeta, z)}{\sqrt{d \zeta d z}} \tag{7.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the functional relations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varpi(\zeta, z)=-\varpi(z, \zeta), \quad \overline{\varpi(1 / \bar{\zeta}, 1 / \bar{z})}=\frac{-\varpi(\zeta, z)}{\zeta z} \tag{7.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Example 7.7. The following configuration was studied by Burnside [16]. Let $1<e_{1}<$ $e_{2}<\ldots<e_{2 g-1}<e_{2 g}$, and let $\hat{\gamma}_{-j}$ be the circle with centre $\left(e_{2 j-1}+e_{2 j}\right) / 2$ and radius $\left(e_{2 j}-e_{2 j-1}\right) / 2$; then we let $\hat{\gamma}_{0}$ be the circle with centre 0 and radius 1 , and let $\hat{\gamma}_{j}$ be the inversion of $\hat{\gamma}_{-j}$ in $\hat{\gamma}_{0}$ for $j=1, \ldots, g$. This gives us $2 g+1$ circles with centres on $\mathbf{R}$ such that
$\hat{\gamma}_{ \pm j}$ for $j=1, \ldots, g$ are $2 g$ circles with mutually disjoint interiors, and we can construct the Schottky surface $\mathcal{E}$ as above. Baker [7] shows that the functions

$$
\begin{gather*}
X(\zeta)=\left(\frac{\varpi(\zeta,-1) \varpi\left(1, \zeta_{0}\right)}{\varpi(\zeta, 1) \varpi\left(-1, \zeta_{0}\right)}\right)^{2} \\
Y(\zeta)=\frac{\varpi(\zeta,-1) \varpi\left(1, \zeta_{0}\right)}{\varpi(\zeta, 1) \varpi\left(-1, \zeta_{0}\right)} \prod_{j=1}^{g} \frac{\varpi\left(\zeta, e_{2 j-1}\right) \varpi\left(e_{2 j}, \zeta_{0}\right)}{\varpi\left(\zeta, e_{2 j}\right) \varpi\left(e_{2 j-1}, \zeta_{0}\right)} \tag{7.27}
\end{gather*}
$$

are meromorphic and invariant under the action of $\Gamma$, so $Y(T(\zeta))=Y(\zeta)$ for all $T \in \Gamma$. Hence $X$ defines a rational function of degree two on $\mathcal{E} \rightarrow \mathbf{C}_{\infty}$, with double pole at $\zeta=1$ and a double zero at $\zeta=-1$, hence $\mathcal{E}$ is hyperelliptic. To identify the corresponding curve, let $\lambda_{j}=X\left(e_{j}\right)$, then $Z=X \prod_{j=1}^{g}\left(X-\lambda_{2 j-1}\right)$. Baker [7] shows that $\mathcal{E}$ is the closure of the complex curve

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\{(X, Z) \in \mathbf{C}^{2}: Z^{2}=X \prod_{j=1}^{2 g}\left(X-\lambda_{j}\right)\right\} \tag{7.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

Renumbering the $\lambda_{j}$ if needs be, we can consider $\left(\lambda_{2 j-1}, \lambda_{2 j}\right)$ as consecutive gaps. By Abel's theorem, there exists a discrete subgroup $\Lambda$ of $\mathbf{C}^{g}$ of full rank such that the map

$$
\begin{equation*}
J: \delta_{\zeta}-\delta_{\zeta_{0}} \mapsto\left(\int_{\zeta_{0}}^{\zeta} \frac{X^{j-1} d X}{Z}\right)_{j=1}^{g} \in \mathbf{C}^{g} \quad(\bmod \quad \Lambda) \tag{7.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

extends via Z-linear combinations and defines a surjective group homomorphism from the divisors on $\mathcal{E}$ of degree zero onto the quotient group $\mathbf{C}^{g} / \Lambda$. Thus one can identify the Picard variety with $\mathbf{C}^{g} / \Lambda$ via the Jacobian map $J$, which is an isomorphism of abelian groups.

Marcenko showed that the set of finite gap potentials is norm dense in $L^{2}([0, \pi] ; \mathbf{R})$; see[25] for more on spectral gaps for $L^{2}$ potentials.

## 8. Kadomtsev-Petviashvili differential equations

For a meromorphic complex function $u(x, y, s)$, the $K P$ equation is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial x}\left(\frac{\partial^{3} u}{\partial x^{3}}-6 u \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}+4 \lambda \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}+4 \alpha \frac{\partial u}{\partial s}\right)+3 \beta^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial y^{2}}=0 \tag{8.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the $\alpha, \beta, \lambda \in \mathbf{C}$ are parameters. In this section, we use ( 2,2 )-admissible linear systems, one can produce solutions to the $K P$ equations via scattering functions and the GelfandLevitan equation. Zakharov and Shabat [72] considered the associated scattering function $\phi$, which we take to be a meromorphic complex function $\phi(x, y, z, t)$ that satisfies the linear $K P$ equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial t}+\frac{\partial^{3} \phi}{\partial x^{3}}+\frac{\partial^{3} \phi}{\partial z^{3}}+\lambda\left(\frac{\partial \phi}{\partial x}+\frac{\partial \phi}{\partial z}\right)=0 \tag{8.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta \frac{\partial \phi}{\partial y}+\frac{\partial^{2} \phi}{\partial x^{2}}-\frac{\partial^{2} \phi}{\partial z^{2}}=0 \tag{8.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Definition ( $G L$ equation for $K P$ ). The appropriate version of the Gelfand-Levitan equation for the linear $K P$ equations is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi(x, z ; y, t)+K(x, z ; y, t)+\int_{x}^{\infty} K(x, s ; y, t) \phi(s, z ; y, t) d s=0 \quad(x<z) . \tag{8.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

For a solution $K(x, z ; y, t)$, define the potential by

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x ; y, t)=-2 \frac{d}{d x} K(x, x ; y, t) . \tag{8.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark. Note that in comparison with [72], our potential has an extra minus sign. We regard $(x, z)$ as the main variables, $(x, x)$ as the diagonal and $(y, t)$ as parameters which describe the deformation of solutions of the integral equation. We write $\frac{\partial}{\partial x}$ to indicate differentiation with respect to the first variable, $\frac{\partial}{\partial z}$ to indicate differentiation with respect to the second variable, and $\frac{d}{d x}$ to indicate differentiation along the diagonal.

We shall introduce a suitable family of admissible linear systems such that $u$ arises as their tau function, and solve the Gelfand-Levitan equation in a similar way to section 2.
Definition. Given $(2,2)$ admissible linear systems $\left(-A_{1}, B_{0}, C_{0}\right)$ and $\left(-A_{2}, B_{0}, C_{0}\right)$ as in Theorem 2.2 with $A_{1}, A_{2} \in \mathcal{L}(H)$. We write $\left(-A_{1},-A_{2} ; B_{0}, C_{0}\right)$ for brevity, which is not to be confused with the notation $(A, B, C, D)$ which is used as shorthand for the colligation matrix of a linear system. Let

$$
\begin{align*}
C(y ; t) & =C_{0} e^{t\left(A_{1}^{3}+\lambda A_{1}\right) / \alpha-y A_{1}^{2} / \beta}  \tag{8.6}\\
B(y ; t) & =e^{t\left(A_{2}^{3}+\lambda A_{2}\right) / \alpha+y A_{2}^{2} / \beta} B_{0} \tag{8.7}
\end{align*}
$$

Then let

$$
\begin{gather*}
\phi(x, z ; y ; t)=C(y ; t) e^{-x A_{1}} e^{-z A_{2}} B(y ; t)  \tag{8.8}\\
R_{x}=R_{x}(y, t)=\int_{x}^{\infty} e^{-A_{2} s} B(y ; t) C(y ; t) e^{-A_{1} s} d s \tag{8.9}
\end{gather*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
K(x, z ; y ; t)=-C(y ; t) e^{-x A_{1}}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1} e^{-z A_{2}} B(y ; t) . \tag{8.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

The signs before $A_{1}^{2}$ and $A_{2}^{2}$ in (8.6) and (8.7) are purposefully different. We do not assume that $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$ commute, so that $\phi$ really does depend upon $y$ in general. When $A_{1}=A_{2}$, the formula (8.9) reduces to our usual $R$ operator in the style (1.7), Proposition 8.1 reduces to Proposition 2.4, and $\psi$ reduces to a Hankel type kernel $\psi(x, z ; y, t)=\phi(x+z ; t)$, independent of $y$.

Zakharov and Shabat used this method for finite rank $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$ to produce soliton solutions of KP. For solutions in the style of Proposition 4.5, see [35, Proposition 14.12]. In order to ensure that various products and brackets are well defined, we have imposed the condition $A_{1}, A_{2} \in \mathcal{L}(H)$; some of the results hold under less stringent conditions.
Proposition 8.1. (i) Then $\phi(x, z ; y ; t)$ satisfies the scattering equations (8.2) and (8.3) for the KP equation.
(ii) $K(x, z ; y ; t)$ satisfies the integral equation (8.4) and

$$
\begin{equation*}
K(x, x ; y ; t)=\frac{d}{d x} \log \operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\right) . \tag{8.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) there exists $x_{0}$ such that $K(x, z ; y ; t)$ and the corresponding $u$ from (8.5) satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial^{2} K}{\partial x^{2}}-\frac{\partial^{2} K}{\partial z^{2}}+\beta \frac{\partial K}{\partial y}=u(x ; y ; t) K(x, z ; y ; t) \quad\left(x_{0}<x<z\right) \tag{8.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. (i) Since the operators are all bounded, the functions are differentiable and one can verify the differential equations, without assuming that $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$ commute.
(ii) The linear system

$$
\hat{\Sigma}=\left(\left[\begin{array}{cc}
-A_{1} & 0  \tag{8.13}\\
0 & -A_{2}
\end{array}\right],\left[\begin{array}{cc}
B_{0} & 0 \\
0 & B(y ; t)
\end{array}\right],\left[\begin{array}{cc}
0 & -C_{0} \\
C(y ; t) & 0
\end{array}\right]\right)
$$

is $(2,2)$ admissible and by Theorem 2.2 the corresponding $\hat{R}_{x}$ operator

$$
\hat{R}_{x}=\left[\begin{array}{cc}
0 & -\int_{x}^{\infty} e^{-s A_{1}} B_{0} C_{0} e^{-s A_{2}} d s  \tag{8.14}\\
\int_{x}^{\infty} e^{-s A_{2}} B(y ; t) C(y ; t) e^{-s A_{1}} d s & 0
\end{array}\right]
$$

is trace class as in Proposition 2.4. Hence

$$
\begin{align*}
\phi(x, z ; y, t)+ & K(x, z ; y, t)+\int_{x}^{\infty} K(x, s ; y, t) \phi(s, z ; y, t) d s \\
= & C(y ; t) e^{-x A_{1}} e^{-z A_{2}} B(y ; t)-C(y ; t) e^{-x A_{1}}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1} e^{-z A_{2}} B(y ; t) \\
& -C(y ; t) e^{-x A_{1}}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1} \int_{x}^{\infty} e^{-s A_{2}} B(y ; t) C(y ; t) e^{-s A_{1}} e^{-z A_{2}} B(y ; t) d s \\
= & C(y ; t) e^{-x A_{1}}\left(I-\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}-\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1} R_{x}\right) e^{-z A_{2}} B(y ; t) \\
= & 0 \tag{8.15}
\end{align*}
$$

as in the proof of Proposition 2.4. One then verifies the determinant identity (8.11), which involves the bottom left entry of $\hat{R}_{x}$ satisfying the asymmetric Lyapunov equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d x} R_{x}=-A_{2} R_{x}-R_{x} A_{1}=-e^{-x A_{2}} B(y ; t) C(y ; t) e^{-x A_{1}} \quad(x>0) \tag{8.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) The solution of the integral equation is unique for large enough $x$ since $\left\|e^{-x A_{1}}\right\| \rightarrow 0$ and $\left\|e^{-x A_{2}}\right\| \rightarrow 0$ exponentially fast as $x \rightarrow \infty$; hence $\Psi(x ; z ; y ; t) \rightarrow 0$ exponentially fast as $x \rightarrow \infty$. Using the scattering equation (8.2), one shows by differentiating (8.4) repeatedly that

$$
\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial x^{2}} K(x, z ; y ; t)-\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial z^{2}} K(x, z ; y ; t)+\beta \frac{\partial}{\partial y} K(x, z ; y ; t)
$$

and $u(x ; y ; t) K(x, z ; y ; t)$ both satisfy the equation which appears when (8.4) is multiplied by $u(x ; y ; t)$, and so by uniqueness are equal.

Theorem 8.2. The potential $u$ associated with $\tau(x, y, t)$ from $\left(-A_{1},-A_{2} ; B(y ; t), C(y ; t)\right)$ satisfies the $K P$ equation (8.1).

The proof involves a calculation which extends the results of sections 4 and 5 , and we split this into two Lemmas.
Definition (Product and bracket). In the notation of Proposition 8.1, let $F_{x}=\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}$. Let $\mathcal{B}$ be any differential ring of functions from $(0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathcal{L}\left(H_{0}\right)$, then let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{A}=\operatorname{span}_{\mathbf{C}}\left\{A_{1}^{n_{1}} A_{2}^{m_{1}} A_{1}^{p_{1}}, A_{1}^{n_{1}} A_{2}^{m_{1}} A_{1}^{p_{1}} F_{x} A_{1}^{n_{2}} \ldots F_{x} A_{1}^{n_{r}} A_{2}^{m_{r}} A_{1}^{p_{r}}: n_{j}, m_{j}, p_{j} \in \mathbf{Z}_{+}\right\} \tag{8.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

be the algebra generated by $I, A_{1}, A_{2}$ and $F$. On $\mathcal{A}$ we introduce the associative product $*$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
P * Q=P\left(A_{1} F+F A_{2}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right) Q \tag{8.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is distributive over the standard addition, and the derivation $\partial: \mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathcal{A}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial P=\left(A_{2}-\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right) P+\frac{d P}{d x}+P\left(A_{1}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)\right) \tag{8.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then let the bracket $\lfloor\cdot\rfloor: \mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}$ be the linear map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lfloor Y\rfloor=C e^{-x A_{1}} F_{x} Y F_{x} e^{-x A_{2}} B \quad(Y \in \mathcal{A}) \tag{8.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 8.3. Then $(\mathcal{A}, *, \partial)$ is a differential ring, and the bracket gives a homomorphism of differential rings $\lfloor\cdot\rfloor:(\mathcal{A}, *, \partial) \rightarrow(\mathcal{B}, \cdot, d / d x)$.
Proof. The basic observation is that $d F / d x=A_{1} F+F A_{2}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F$, so one can check that

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{d}{d x}\left(A_{1} F+F A_{2}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right)=\left(A_{1}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)\right)\left(\left(A_{1} F+F A_{2}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right)\right. \\
+\left(A_{1} F+F A_{2}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right)\left(A_{2}-\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right) \tag{8.21}
\end{gather*}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d}{d x} P\left(A_{1} F+F A_{2}-\right. & \left.F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right) Q \\
= & \frac{d P}{d x}\left(A_{1} F+F A_{2}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right) Q \\
& +P\left(A_{1}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)\right)\left(A_{1} F+F A_{2}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right) Q \\
& +P\left(A_{1} F+F A_{2}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right)\left(A_{2}-\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right) Q \\
& +P\left(A_{1} F+F A_{2}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right) \frac{d Q}{d x} \tag{8.22}
\end{align*}
$$

so by adding the terms at either end of this expression, one shows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial(P * Q)=(\partial P) * Q+P *(\partial Q) \tag{8.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now we consider the bracket, and find from Lyapunov's equation that

$$
\begin{align*}
\lfloor P\rfloor\lfloor Q\rfloor & =C e^{-x A_{1}} F P F e^{-x A_{2}} B C e^{-x A_{1}} F Q F e^{-x A_{2}} B \\
& =C e^{-x A_{1}} F P F\left(A_{2} S+S A_{1}\right) F Q F e^{-x A_{2}} B \\
& \left.=C e^{-x A_{1}} F P\left(A_{1} F+F A_{2}\right)-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right) Q F e^{-x A_{2}} B \\
& =\lfloor P * Q\rfloor \tag{8.24}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d}{d x}\lfloor P\rfloor & =\frac{d}{d x} C e^{-x A_{1}} F P F e^{-x A_{2}} B \\
& =C e^{-x A_{1}} F\left(\left(A_{2}-\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right) P+\frac{d P}{d x}+P\left(A_{1}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)\right)\right) F e^{-x A_{2}} B \\
& =\lfloor\partial P\rfloor . \tag{8.25}
\end{align*}
$$

With the usual operator multiplication, let $\mathcal{A}_{0}$ be the subalgebra of $\mathcal{A}$ that is generated by $I, A_{1}$, and $A_{2}$. Let $\mathbf{J}$ be the ideal in $\mathcal{A}$ generated by $F$; then the powers $\mathbf{J}^{n}$ give a decreasing chain of ideals such that $\cap_{n=1}^{\infty} \mathbf{J}^{n}=\{0\}$; any product including $n$ factors of $F$ belongs to $\mathbf{J}^{n}$. Now $\mathcal{A} / \mathbf{J}$ is isomorphic as an algebra to $\mathcal{A}_{0}$, and $\partial\left(\mathbf{J}^{n}\right) \subseteq \mathbf{J}^{n}$, so there are induced maps $\tilde{\partial}:\left(\mathbf{J}^{n} / \mathbf{J}^{n+1}\right) \rightarrow\left(\mathbf{J}^{n} / \mathbf{J}^{n+1}\right)$; in particular $\tilde{\partial}: \mathcal{A} / \mathbf{J} \rightarrow \mathcal{A} / \mathbf{J}$ may be identified with $P \mapsto A_{2} P+P A_{1}$ on $\mathcal{A}_{0}$. Thus we may regard $\mathcal{A}$ as a graded algebra consisting of polynomials in $F$ with a (noncommutative) algebra $\mathcal{A}_{0}$ of coefficients. We regard $\partial$ as the sum of the derivation $d / d x$, the multiplications $X \mapsto A_{2} X+X A_{1}$ which typically preserve the degree, and the multiplications $X \mapsto-\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F X$ and $X \mapsto-X F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)$ which can raise the degree by one at most.
Lemma 8.4. The function

$$
\begin{equation*}
w=4 \alpha \frac{\partial u}{\partial t}+4 \lambda \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}+\frac{\partial^{3} u}{\partial x^{3}}-6 u \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} \tag{8.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

is the image under the bracket $\lfloor\cdot\rfloor$ of the sum of terms

$$
\begin{gather*}
6 A_{1}^{4}-12 A_{2}^{2}+6 A_{2}^{4} \\
+12\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F A_{2}\left(A_{1}-A_{2}\right)^{2}-12\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) A_{1} F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) \\
\left.+6\left(A_{1}^{2}+2 A_{2} A_{1}\right)+A_{2}\right)^{2} F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)-6\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}+2 A_{2} A_{1}+A_{2}^{2}\right) \\
+12\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)-12\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) . \tag{8.27}
\end{gather*}
$$

Proof. We introduce the ordered products, in which powers of $A_{2}$ powers occur before powers of $A_{1}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
A^{(1)}=A_{1}+A_{2}, \quad A^{(2)}=A_{1}^{2}+2 A_{2} A_{1}+A_{2}^{2}, \quad A^{(3)}=A_{1}^{3}+3 A_{2} A_{1}^{2}+3 A_{2}^{2} A_{1}+A_{2}^{3}, \ldots \tag{8.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the coefficients are as in Pascal's triangle. It suffices to compute

$$
\begin{equation*}
W=4 \alpha \partial_{t} U+4 \lambda \partial U+\partial^{3} U-3 U * \partial U-3 \partial U * U, \tag{8.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

since $w=\lfloor W\rfloor$ by Lemma 8.3. The terms from (8.29) are given in the following multiplication table (8.30). Starting with $U=-2 A^{(1)}$, we have derivatives

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial U= & -2 A^{(2)}+4 A^{(1)} F A^{(1)}, \\
\partial^{2} U= & -2 A^{(3)}+6 A^{(2)} F A^{(1)}+6 A^{(1)} F A^{(2)}-12 A^{(1)} F A^{(1)} F A^{(1)}, \\
\partial^{3} U= & -2 A^{(4)}+8 A^{(3)} F A^{(1)}+8 A^{(1)} F A^{(3)}+12 A^{(2)} F A^{(2)} \\
& -24 A^{(1)} F A^{(1)} F A^{(2)}-24 A^{(1)} F A^{(2)} F A^{(1)}-24 A^{(2)} F A^{(1)} F A^{(1)} \\
& +48 A^{(1)} F A^{(1)} F A^{(1)} F A^{(1)} ; \tag{8.30}
\end{align*}
$$

these products exhibit a high degree of symmetry. The only proof known to the authors is applying $\partial$ repeatedly, then patiently multiplying out and gathering the various products. To respect the symmetry of terms, we use

$$
\begin{align*}
U * \partial U+\partial U * U= & 4 A^{(1)} F A_{2} A^{(2)}+A^{(2)} A_{1} F A^{(1)}+A^{(2)} F A_{2} A^{(1)}+A^{(1)} A_{1} F A^{(2)} \\
& -8 A^{(2)} F A^{(1)} F A^{(1)}-8 A^{(1)} F A^{(2)} F A^{(1)}-8 A^{(1)} F A^{(1)} F A^{(2)} \\
& -4\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2} F A^{(1)} F A^{(1)}+4 A^{(1)} F A^{(1)} F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)\right. \\
& +16^{(1)} F A^{(1)} F A^{(1)} F A^{(1)} . \tag{8.31}
\end{align*}
$$

We likewise introduce

$$
\begin{align*}
\alpha \partial_{t} U= & 2\left(A_{2}^{3}+\lambda A_{2}\right)\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)+2\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)\left(A_{1}^{3}+\lambda A_{1}\right) \\
- & 2\left(A_{1}^{3}+A_{2}^{3}+\lambda A_{1}+\lambda A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) \\
& -2\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{3}+A_{2}^{3}+\lambda A_{1}+\lambda A_{2}\right) \tag{8.32}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
\beta^{2} \partial_{y}^{2} U= & -2\left(A_{1}^{5}+A_{2} A_{1}^{4}-2 A_{2}^{2} A_{1}^{3}-2 A_{2}^{3} A_{2}^{2}+A_{2}^{4} A_{1}+A_{2}^{5}\right) \\
& +2\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{4}-2 A_{1}^{2} A_{2}^{2}+A_{2}^{4}\right)+2\left(A_{1}^{4}-2 A_{1}^{2} A_{2}^{2}+A_{2}^{4}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) \\
& +4\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{3}+A_{2} A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2} A_{1}-A_{2}^{3}\right) \\
& +4\left(A_{1}^{3}+A_{2} A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2} A_{1}-A_{2}^{3}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) \\
& -4\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) \\
& -4\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) \\
& -4\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) \tag{8.33}
\end{align*}
$$

Then one checks that $W$ reduces to the combination (8.29).

Proof of Theorem 8.2 Let $\Theta=\{X \in \mathcal{A}:\lfloor X\rfloor=0\}$ and observe that $\Theta$ contains the commutator subspace spanned by $Q * P-P * Q$. The final two terms in $W$ are of degree two in $F$, which would give terms of degree three in $\partial W$, which do not appear in the formula for $\partial_{y}^{2} U$. Hence we replace them by terms of degree one, before differentiating; or equivalently, we show that $4 \beta^{2} \partial_{y}^{2} U+\partial W$ belongs to $\Theta$. We have

$$
\begin{align*}
0= & \left\lfloor A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right\rfloor\left\lfloor A_{1}+A_{2}\right\rfloor-\left\lfloor A_{1}+A_{2}\right\rfloor\left\lfloor A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right\rfloor \\
= & \left\lfloor\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)\left(A_{1} F+F A_{2}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right)\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)\right\rfloor \\
& -\left\lfloor\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)\left(A_{1} F+F A_{1}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)\right\rfloor\right. \\
= & \left\lfloor\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)\left(A_{1} F+F A_{2}\right)\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)-\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)\left(A_{1} F+F A_{2}\right)\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)\right\rfloor \\
& -\left\lfloor\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)-\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)\right\rfloor . \tag{8.34}
\end{align*}
$$

So when we replace the final two terms of degree two by terms such as $\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)\left(A_{1} F+\right.$ $\left.F A_{2}\right)\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)$, we obtain the following collection of terms of degree one

$$
\begin{gather*}
12\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F A_{2}\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)-12\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) A_{1} F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) \\
+6\left(A_{1}^{2}+2 A_{2} A_{1}+A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)-6\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}+2 A_{2} A_{1}+A_{2}^{2}\right) \\
\left.+6\left(A_{1}^{2}+2 A_{2} A_{1}\right)+A_{2}\right)^{2} F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)-6\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}+2 A_{2} A_{1}+A_{2}^{2}\right) \\
+12\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) A_{1} F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right)+12\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F A_{2}\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) \\
-12\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) A_{1} F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)-12\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F A_{2}\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) \\
=-12\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) . \tag{8.35}
\end{gather*}
$$

Now we compute

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial\left(6 A_{1}^{4}-12\right. & \left.A_{2}^{2}+6 A_{2}^{4}-12\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)\right) \\
= & 6 A_{2} A_{1}^{4}-12 A_{2}^{3} A_{1}^{2}+6 A_{2}^{5}+6 A_{1}^{5}-12 A_{2}^{2} A_{1}^{3}+6 A_{2}^{4} A_{1} \\
& -\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(6 A_{1}^{4}-12 A_{2}^{2} A_{1}^{2}+6 A_{2}^{2}\right)-\left(6 A_{1}^{4}-12 A_{2}^{2} A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{4}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) \\
& -12 A_{2}\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)-12\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) A_{1} \\
& +12\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)+12\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) \\
& -12\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)\left(A_{1} F+F A_{2}-F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\right)\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) \\
= & 6 A_{1}^{5}+6 A_{2} A_{1}^{4}-12 A_{2}^{2} A_{1}^{3}-12 A_{2}^{3} A_{1}^{3}+6 A_{2} A_{1}^{4}+6 A_{1}^{5} \\
& -6\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{4}-2 A_{2}^{2} A_{1}^{2}+A_{1}^{4}\right)-6\left(A_{1}^{4}-2 A_{2}^{2} A_{1}^{2}+A_{1}^{4}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) \\
& +\left(-12\left(A_{2} A_{1}^{2}+12 A_{2}^{3}-12 A_{1}^{3}+12 A_{2}^{2} A_{1}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)\right. \\
& +\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(-12 A_{1}^{3}+12 A_{2}^{2} A_{1}-12 A_{2} A_{1}^{2}+12 A_{1}^{3}\right) \\
& +12\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right)+12\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) \\
& +12\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}+A_{2}\right) F\left(A_{1}^{2}-A_{2}^{2}\right) . \tag{8.36}
\end{align*}
$$

By comparing this with (8.27) we obtain the result.

## 9. The Baker-Akhiezer function for $K P$

In this final section, we obtain solutions to the time dependent Schrödinger equation in the form of quotients of tau functions for a family of admissible linear systems. When $u$ satisfies $K P$, one can choose $w$ so that the operators

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta \frac{\partial}{\partial y}+L=\beta \frac{\partial}{\partial y}-\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial x^{2}}+u(x ; y, t) \tag{9.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}+M=\frac{\partial}{\partial t}+\frac{\partial^{3}}{\partial x^{3}}-\frac{3}{2} u(x ; y, t) \frac{\partial}{\partial x}-\frac{3}{4} \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}-3 \alpha w(x ; y, t) \tag{9.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

commute. In the following result, we obtain an explicit form for a common eigenfunction for both these operators, so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\beta \frac{\partial}{\partial y}+L\right) \psi_{\zeta}=0=\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t}+M\right) \psi_{\zeta} \tag{9.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

By analogy with (3.2), we call a particular family of solutions the Baker-Akhiezer function.
Definition (Baker-Akhiezer function). Consider the linear system ( $\left.-A_{1}, A_{2} ; B(y, t), C(y, t)\right)$ from Theorem 8.2, with spectral parameter $\zeta$, and $R_{x}=R_{x}(y, t)$ as in (8.9). Then the BakerAkhiezer function is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{\zeta}(x ; y, t)=e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} \frac{\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\left(\zeta I+A_{1}\right)\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right)^{-1}\right)}{\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\right)} \tag{9.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

defined on $\zeta \in \mathbf{C} \backslash \operatorname{Spec}\left(A_{2}\right)$.
Proposition 9.1. Let $\alpha w(x ; y, t)=\frac{\partial K}{2 \partial y}(x, x ; y, t)$.
(i) Then $\beta \frac{\partial}{\partial y}+L$ and $\frac{\partial}{\partial t}+M$ commute;
(ii) The Baker-Akhiezer function $\psi_{\zeta}$ is meromorphic in $(x, y, t) \in \mathbf{C}^{3}$;
(iii) also $\psi_{\zeta}$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{\zeta}(x ; y, t)}{\partial x^{2}}+u(x ; y, t) \psi_{\zeta}(x ; y, t)+\beta \frac{\partial \psi_{\zeta}(x ; y, t)}{\partial y}=0 \tag{9.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iv) and satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \psi_{\zeta}}{\partial t}+\frac{\partial^{3} \psi_{\zeta}}{\partial x^{3}}-\frac{3}{2} u(x ; y, t) \frac{\partial \psi_{\zeta}}{\partial x}-\frac{3}{4} \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} \psi_{\zeta}(x ; y, t)-3 w(x ; y, t) \psi_{\zeta}(x ; y, t)=0 . \tag{9.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof (i) We have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha \frac{\partial w}{\partial x}(x ; y, t)=\frac{1}{2} \frac{\partial}{\partial y} \frac{d K}{d x}(x, x ; y, t)=\frac{1}{4} \frac{\partial u}{\partial y}(x ; y, t), \tag{9.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is what one needs to make the operators commute.
(ii) The function $(x, y, t) \mapsto R_{x}$ is entire from $\mathbf{C}^{3} \rightarrow \mathcal{L}^{1}(H)$, hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{det}\left(I+\left(\zeta I+A_{1}\right) R_{x}\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right)^{-1}\right) \tag{9.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

is entire and $\psi_{\zeta}$ is a quotient of entire functions, hence is meromorphic.
(iii) By some simple manipulations of the determinants, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\psi_{\zeta}(x ; y, t) & =e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} \frac{\operatorname{det}\left(I+\left(\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right) R_{x}+\left(A_{2} R_{x}+R_{x} A_{1}\right)\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right)^{-1}\right)\right.}{\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\right)} \\
& =e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} \frac{\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}+\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right)^{-1}\left(A_{2} R_{x}+R_{x} A_{1}\right)\right)}{\operatorname{det}\left(I+R_{x}\right)} \\
& =e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} \operatorname{det}\left(I+\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right)^{-1}\left(A_{2} R_{x}+R_{x} A_{1}\right)\right) ; \tag{9.9}
\end{align*}
$$

so by Lyapunov's equation, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\psi_{\zeta}(x ; y, t) & =e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} \operatorname{det}\left(I+\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right)^{-1} e^{-x A_{2}} B(y, t) C(y, t) e^{-x A_{1}}\right) \\
& =e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t}\left(1+\operatorname{trace}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right)^{-1} e^{-x A_{2}} B(y, t) C(y, t) e^{-x A_{1}}\right) \\
& =e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t}\left(1+C(y, t) e^{-x A_{1}}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1}\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right)^{-1} e^{-x A_{2}} B(y, t)\right) \tag{9.10}
\end{align*}
$$

since $B(y, t) C(y, t)$ has rank one; then we write this as

$$
\begin{align*}
\psi_{\zeta}(x ; y, t) & =e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t}\left(1-C(y, t) e^{-x A_{1}}\left(I+R_{x}\right)^{-1} \int_{x}^{\infty} e^{-z A_{2}} e^{\zeta(z-x)} d z B(y, t)\right) \\
& =e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t}\left(1+\int_{x}^{\infty} K(x, z ; y, t) e^{\zeta(z-x)} d z\right) \tag{9.11}
\end{align*}
$$

Now we calculate

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \psi_{\zeta}}{\partial y}=-\left(\zeta^{2} / \beta\right) e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t}+\int_{x}^{\infty} \frac{\partial}{\partial y} K(x, z, y, t) e^{\zeta z-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} d z \tag{9.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \psi_{\zeta}}{\partial x}=\zeta e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t}-e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} K(x, x ; y, t)+\int_{x}^{\infty} \frac{\partial}{\partial x} K(x, z ; y, t) e^{\zeta z-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} d z \tag{9.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

hence

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{\zeta}}{\partial x^{2}}= & \zeta^{2} e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t}-\zeta e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} K(x, x ; y, t)+e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} \frac{d}{d x} K(x, x ; y, t) \\
& -\frac{\partial}{\partial x} K(x, x ; y, t) e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t}+\int_{x}^{\infty} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial x^{2}} K(x, z ; y, t) e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} d z \tag{9.14}
\end{align*}
$$

Integrating by parts, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
& \int_{x}^{\infty} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial z^{2}} K(x, z ; y, t) e^{\zeta z-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} d z \\
&=-\frac{\partial}{\partial z} K(x, x ; y, t) e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t}-\zeta \int_{x}^{\infty} \frac{\partial}{\partial z} K(x, z ; y, t) e^{\zeta z-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} d z \\
&=-\frac{\partial}{\partial z} K(x, x ; y, t) e^{\zeta z-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t}+K(x, x ; y, t) e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} \\
& \quad+\zeta^{2} \int_{x}^{\infty} K(x, z ; y, t) e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} d z ; \tag{9.15}
\end{align*}
$$

recalling the (8.10), and the definition of $u(x ; y, t)$, we deduce the differential equation for $\psi_{\zeta}$.
(iv) One starts with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{\zeta}(x, y, t)=e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t}+\int_{x}^{\infty} e^{\zeta z-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t} K(x, z ; y, t) d z \tag{9.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then by manipulating the Gelfand-Levitan equation, one deduces (9.6).

Let $\left(\zeta_{j}\right)$ be a sequence of distinct complex numbers and $\left(\psi_{\zeta_{j}}\right)_{j=1}^{\infty}$ a corresponding sequence of distinct solutions of the pair of equations (9.4) and (9.5), where $u$ is as in (8.5) and fixed. Then, taking derivatives in the $x$-variable, one forms the Wronskian

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{n}=\operatorname{Wr}\left(\psi_{\zeta_{1}}, \ldots, \psi_{\zeta_{n}}\right) \tag{9.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

and introduces a sequence of new potentials and new Baker-Akhiezer functions by

$$
\begin{gather*}
u_{n}(x, y, t)=u(x, y, t)-2 \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial x^{2}} \log \Delta_{n}(x, y, t)  \tag{9.18}\\
\Psi_{n}(x, y, t)=\frac{\Delta_{n+1}(x, y, t)}{\Delta_{n}(x, y, t)} . \tag{9.19}
\end{gather*}
$$

Corollary 9.2. (Matveev) Then $\Psi_{n}$ and $u_{n}$ satisfy (9.5), and the corresponding (9.6).
Proof. Matveev [46] showed that this follows from Proposition 9.1 by direct calculation.

Remarks 9.3 (i) Corollary 9.2 enables us to generate a sequence of solutions ( $u_{n}$ ) of the $K P$ equation. If all the $\left(\psi_{\zeta_{j}}\right)$ belong to a differential field $\left(\mathcal{F}, \frac{\partial}{\partial x}, \frac{\partial}{\partial y}, \frac{\partial}{\partial t}\right)$, then $\left(u_{n}\right)$ and $\left(\Psi_{n}\right)_{n=1}^{\infty}$ also belong to $\mathcal{F}$. The case in which $u=0$ and $\psi_{\zeta}(x ; y, t)=e^{\zeta x-\zeta^{2} y / \beta-\zeta^{3} t}$ gives soliton solutions to $K P$.
(ii) If the potential $u$, which appears as a coefficient of $L$ in Proposition 9.1 does not depend upon $y$, then we can reduce Proposition 9.1(i) to a Lax equation $\frac{\partial L}{\partial t}=[L, M]$. The results of this section are applicable even when the determinant quotient (9.4) indeed depends upon $y$.
(iii) Krichever and Novikov [41, 42] consider Baker-Akhiezer functions $\psi_{\zeta}(x, t)$ that are meromorphic with respect to the spectral parameter $\zeta$ and produce examples based upon quasi-periodic theta functions; in particular, the function $\psi_{2}(x, \zeta)$ of section 7 is meromorphic; see [39, 32]. Proposition 9.1 does not assert that $\zeta \mapsto \tau_{\zeta}(x, t)$ is meromorphic on $\mathbf{C}$ and the case when the state space $H$ has infinite dimension is problematic. In the rest of this section we circumvent this problem by introducing infinitely many time variables, and acting on the linear systems with a type of infinite dimensional Lie group. However, Segal and Wilson [64, Proposition 6.11] have identified $\tau_{\zeta}$ functions that are meromorphic.
Definition (i) For fixed $A_{1}, A_{2} \in \mathcal{L}(H)$, let $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{A_{1}, A_{2}}$ be the set of $\Sigma=\left(-A_{1},-A_{2} ; B, C\right)$ that give a $(2,2)$ admissible linear system, where $B: \mathbf{C} \rightarrow H$ and $C: H \rightarrow \mathbf{C}$ vary. Let $\mathbf{C}_{\eta}^{\infty}=\left\{\left(a_{j}\right)_{j=0}^{\infty} \in \mathbf{C}^{\infty}: \limsup _{j \rightarrow \infty}\left|a_{j}\right|^{1 / j} \leq \eta\right\}$ be the space of coefficients of complex power series with radius of convergence greater than or equal to $1 / \eta$, which may be identified with the algebra of holomorphic functions $D(0, \eta) \rightarrow \mathbf{C}$. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
V(t)=\exp \left(\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} t_{j} A_{2}^{j}\right), \quad W(t)=\exp \left(-\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} t_{j}\left(-A_{1}\right)^{j}\right) \quad\left(t=\left(t_{j}\right) \in \mathbf{C}_{0}^{\infty}\right) \tag{9.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

and extend to $t \in \mathbf{C}_{\eta}^{\infty}$ with $\eta>0$ when the series converge absolutely. There is an action $\rho$ of $\mathbf{C}_{0}^{\infty}$ on $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_{A_{1}, A_{2}}$ which is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho(t):\left(-A_{1},-A_{2}, B, C\right) \mapsto\left(-A_{1},-A_{2}, V(t) B, C W(t)\right) \quad\left(t \in \mathbf{C}_{0}^{\infty}\right) \tag{9.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) (Tau function). The tau function of the right-hand side of (9.21) is defined to be

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau(x ; t)=\operatorname{det}\left(I+V(t) R_{x} W(t)\right) \quad\left(t=\left(t_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{\infty}\right) \tag{9.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $R_{x}=\int_{x}^{\infty} e^{-v A_{2}} B C e^{-v A_{1}} d v$.
(iii) (Spectral shift). We introduce $[s]=\left(s^{j} / j\right)_{j=1}^{\infty}$ so that for sufficiently small $|s|, \rho$ extends to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho([s]):\left(-A_{1},-A_{2}, B, C\right) \mapsto\left(-A_{1},-A_{2},\left(I-s A_{2}\right)^{-1} B, C\left(I+s A_{1}\right)\right) \tag{9.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

then choose $\zeta=1 / s$ with $\zeta \in \mathbf{C} \backslash \operatorname{Spec}\left(A_{2}\right)$ so that the spectral shift is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(-A_{1},-A_{2}, B, C\right) \mapsto\left(-A_{1},-A_{2},\left(I-A_{2} / \zeta\right)^{-1} B, C\left(I+A_{1} / \zeta\right)\right) \tag{9.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then we define the Baker-Akhiezer function by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{\zeta}(x ; t)=\exp \left(x \zeta+\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \zeta^{j} t_{j}\right) \frac{\tau(x ; t+[1 / \zeta])}{\tau(x ; t)} \quad\left(t=\left(t_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{\infty}\right) \tag{9.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

This matches with the definition used in Proposition 9.1 when we choose

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(t_{1}, t_{2}, t_{3}, t_{4}, \ldots\right)=(t \lambda / \alpha, y / \beta, t / \alpha, 0, \ldots) \tag{9.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iv) (Sato's integral). The Sato integral is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{|\zeta|=r} \tau(x ; t+[1 / \zeta]) \tau\left(x ; t^{\prime}-[1 / \zeta]\right) \exp \left(\sum_{j=1}^{\infty}\left(t_{j}-t_{j}^{\prime}\right) \zeta^{j}\right) d \zeta \quad\left(t=\left(t_{j}\right)_{j=1}^{\infty}, t^{\prime}=\left(t_{j}^{\prime}\right)_{j=1}^{\infty} \in \mathbf{C}_{0}^{\infty}\right) \tag{9.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Theorem 9.5. Suppose that $A_{1}, A_{2} \in \mathcal{L}(H)$ be as in Theorem 2.2. Then Sato's integral vanishes identically for all $r>\max \left\{\left\|A_{1}\right\|,\left\|A_{2}\right\|\right\}$.
Proof We consider the integral

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(t, y)=\int_{|\zeta|=r} \exp \left(-2 \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \zeta^{j} y_{j}\right) \frac{\tau(x, t+y+[1 / \zeta]) \tau(x, t-y-[1 / \zeta])}{\tau(x, t+y) \tau(x, t-y)} d \zeta \tag{9.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

which as in (9.8) we can write as

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{|\zeta|=r} & \left(1+C e^{-x A_{2}} W(t+y)\left(I+V(t+y) R_{x} W(t+y)\right)^{-1} V(t+y) e^{-x A_{2}}\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right)^{-1} B\right) \\
& \times\left(1-C\left(\zeta I+A_{1}\right)^{-1} e^{-x A_{1}} W(t-y)\left(I+V(t-y) R_{x} W(t-y)\right)^{-1} V(t-y) e^{-x A_{2}} B\right) \\
& \times \exp \left(-2 \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \zeta^{j} y_{j}\right) d \zeta \tag{9.29}
\end{align*}
$$

which we split as a sum of four terms: first we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{|\zeta|=r} \exp \left(-2 \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \zeta^{j} y_{j}\right) d \zeta=0 \tag{9.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

by Cauchy's theorem; the second is

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{|\zeta|=r} & \exp \left(-2 \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \zeta^{j} y_{j}\right) C e^{-x A_{2}} W(t+y)\left(I+V(t+y) R_{x} W(t+y)\right)^{-1} V(t+y) e^{-x A_{2}}\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right)^{-1} B d \zeta \\
& \left.=2 \pi i C e^{-x A_{1}} W(t+y)\right)\left(I+V(t+y) R_{x} W(t+y)\right)^{-1} V(t+y) e^{-x A_{2}} \exp \left(-2 \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} y_{j} A_{2}^{j}\right) B \\
& \left.=2 \pi i C e^{-x A_{1}} W(t+y)\right)\left(I+V(t+y) R_{x} W(t+y)\right)^{-1} V(t-y) e^{-x A_{2}} B \tag{9.31}
\end{align*}
$$

by the residue theorem; the third is

$$
\begin{align*}
-\int_{|\zeta|=r} & \exp \left(-2 \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \zeta^{j} y_{j}\right) C\left(\zeta I+A_{1}\right)^{-1} e^{-x A_{1}} W(t-y) \\
& \times\left(I+V(t-y) R_{x} W(t-y)\right)^{-1} V(t-y) e^{-x A_{2}} B d \zeta \\
& =-C e^{-x A_{1}} \exp \left(-2 \sum_{j=1}^{\infty}\left(-A_{1}\right)^{j} y_{j}\right) W(t-y)\left(I+V(t-y) R_{x} W(t-y)\right)^{-1} V(t-y) e^{-x A_{2}} B \\
& =-C e^{-x A_{1}} W(t+y)\left(I+V(t-y) R_{x} W(t-y)\right)^{-1} V(t-y) e^{-x A_{2}} B \tag{9.32}
\end{align*}
$$

likewise; and finally

$$
\begin{align*}
- & \int_{|\zeta|=r} \exp \left(-2 \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \zeta^{j} y_{j}\right) C e^{-x A_{2}} W(t+y)\left(I+V(t+y) R_{x} U(t+y)\right)^{-1} V(t+y) e^{-x A_{2}}\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right)^{-1} \\
& \times B C\left(\zeta I+A_{1}\right)^{-1} e^{-x A_{1}} W(t-y)\left(I+V(t-y) R_{x} W(t-y)\right)^{-1} V(t-y) e^{-x A_{2}} B d \zeta \tag{9.33}
\end{align*}
$$

which involves

$$
\begin{equation*}
J(y)=\int_{|\zeta|=r} \exp \left(-2 \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \zeta^{j} y_{j}\right)\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right)^{-1} B C\left(\zeta I+A_{1}\right)^{-1} d \zeta . \tag{9.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

This integral resembles (4.40), and likewise gives a solution to a type of Lyapunov equation. Now

$$
\begin{align*}
-\frac{1}{2} \frac{\partial J}{\partial y_{1}}+J A_{1} & =\int_{|\zeta|=r} \exp \left(-2 \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \zeta^{j} y_{j}\right)\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right)^{-1} B C d \zeta \\
& =2 \pi i V(-2 y) B C \tag{9.35}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
-\frac{1}{2} \frac{\partial J}{\partial y_{1}}-A_{2} J & =\int_{|\zeta|=r} \exp \left(-2 \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \zeta^{j} y_{j}\right)\left(\zeta I-A_{2}\right)^{-1} B C d \zeta \\
& =2 \pi i B C W(2 y) \tag{9.36}
\end{align*}
$$

so by subtracting and applying the residue theorem, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{2} J+J A_{1}=2 \pi i(V(-2 y) B C-B C W(2 y)) . \tag{9.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then we introduce $J_{0}=2 \pi i\left(V(-2 y) R_{0}-R_{0} W(2 y)\right)$, which satisfies

$$
\begin{align*}
A_{2} J_{0}+J_{0} A_{1} & =2 \pi i V(-2 y)\left(A_{2} R_{0}+R_{0} A_{1}\right)-2 \pi i\left(A_{2} R_{0}+R_{0} A_{1}\right) W(2 y) \\
& =2 \pi i(V(-2 y) B C-B C W(2 y))=A_{2} J+J A_{1}, \tag{9.38}
\end{align*}
$$

by Lyapunov's equation. By the uniqueness of solution of this equation, we deduce that

$$
\begin{equation*}
J(y)=J_{0}=2 \pi i\left(V(-2 y) R_{0}-R_{0} W(2 y)\right) \tag{9.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, combining the terms (9.30), (9.31), (9.32) and (9.33) via (9.39), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
S(y, t)= & 2 \pi i C W(t+y) e^{-x A_{1}}\left(\left(I+V(t+y) R_{x} W(t+y)\right)^{-1}-\left(I+V(t-y) R_{x} W(t-y)\right)^{-1}\right. \\
& \quad-\left(I+V(t+y) R_{x} W(t+y)\right)^{-1} V(t+y) e^{-x A_{1}} J e^{-x A_{2}} W(t-y) \\
& \left.\times\left(I+V(t-y) R_{x} W(t-y)\right)^{-1}\right) V(t-y) e^{-x A_{2}} B \\
= & 2 \pi i C W(t+y) e^{-x A_{1}}\left(I+V(t+y) R_{x} W(t+y)\right)^{-1}\left(\left(I+V(t-y) R_{x} W(t-y)\right)\right. \\
& \left.\quad-\left(I+V(t-y) R_{x} W(t-y)\right)+\left(V(t+y) R_{x} W(t+y)-V(t-y) R_{x} W(t-y)\right)\right) \\
& \times\left(I+V(t-y) R_{x} W(t-y)\right)^{-1} V(t-y) e^{-x A_{2}} B \\
= & 0 \tag{9.40}
\end{align*}
$$

as required.

Corollary 9.6.(i) For $s_{0}, s_{1}, s_{2}, s_{3} \in \mathbf{C}$, let $\sigma_{j k}=\left(s_{j}-s_{k}\right) \tau\left(x ; t+\left[s_{j}\right]+\left[s_{k}\right]\right)$. Then Fay's identity holds

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{0,1} \sigma_{2,3}-\sigma_{0,2} \sigma_{1,3}+\sigma_{0,3} \sigma_{1,2}=0 \tag{9.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) for the Wronskian with derivatives in the $x$-variable, the differential form of Fay's identity holds

$$
\operatorname{Wr}\left(\tau\left(x ; t+\left[s_{1}\right]\right), \tau\left(x ; t+\left[s_{2}\right]\right)\right)=\frac{s_{1}-s_{2}}{s_{1} s_{2}} \operatorname{det}\left[\begin{array}{cc}
\tau(x ; t) & \tau\left(x ; t+\left[s_{2}\right]\right)  \tag{9.42}\\
\tau\left(x ; t+\left[s_{1}\right]\right) & \tau\left(x ; t+\left[s_{1}\right]+\left[s_{2}\right]\right)
\end{array}\right] ;
$$

(iii) the second-order differential identity holds

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial \zeta \partial x} \log \tau(x ; t+[1 / \zeta])=1-\frac{\tau(x ; t) \tau(x ; t+2[1 / \zeta])}{\tau(x ; t+[1 / \zeta])^{2}} . \tag{9.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. (i) See [66] and [2]. We have written the result in the style of a Plücker relation.
(ii) See [66] and [2]. This spectral addition rule has a similar style to the Toda equation (3.18).
(iii) We divide (ii) by $\tau\left(x ; t+\left[s_{1}\right]\right) \tau\left(x ; t+\left[s_{2}\right]\right)$ so as to obtain $\frac{\partial}{\partial x} \log \tau\left(x ; t+\left[s_{2}\right]\right) / \tau\left(x ; t+\left[s_{1}\right]\right)$ on the left-hand side; then we differentiate with respect to $s_{2}$, thus obtaining

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial s_{2} \partial x}\right)_{s_{2}=s_{1}} \log \tau\left(x ; t+\left[s_{2}\right]\right)=-\frac{1}{s_{1}^{2}}\left(1-\frac{\tau(x ; t) \tau\left(x ; t+2\left[s_{1}\right]\right)}{\tau\left(x ; t+\left[s_{1}\right]\right)^{2}}\right) \tag{9.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

then we change variables to $s_{1}=1 / \zeta$. This resembles the proof in [57, II 3.124].

## Acknowledgements

The work of the second-named author was supported by an EPSRC Research studentship. The authors are grateful to Prof H.P. McKean for helpful comments which motivated this work.

## References

[1] M. Adler, Integrable systems, random matrices and random processes, pp. 131-225, J. Harned edr. Random Matrices, Random Processes and Integrable Systems CRM (Springer, 2011).
[2] M. Adler and P. van Moerbeke, Birkhoff strata, Bäcklund transformations, and regularization of isospectral operators, Adv. Math. 108 (1994), 140-204.
[3] T. Akaza, Poincaré theta series and singular sets of Schottky groups, Nagoya Math. J. 24 (1964), 43-65.
[4] T. Aktosun, F. Demontis and C. van der Mee, Exact solutions to the focusing nonlinear Schrödinger equation, Inverse Problems 23 (2007), 2171-2195.
[5] Y.A. Antipov and D.G. Crowdy, Riemann-Hilbert problem for automorphic functions and the Schottky-Klein prime function, Complex Anal. Oper. Theory 1 (2007), 317-334.
[6] M.F. Atiyah and I.G. Macdonald, Introduction to commutative algebra, (Addison Wesley, Reading, Massachusetts, 1969).
[7] H.F. Baker Abelian functions: Abel's theorem and the allied theory of theta functions, Cambridge University Press, edition of 1995.
[8] R. Bhatia and P. Rosenthal, How and why to solve the operator equation $A X-X B=Y$, Bull. London Math. Soc. 29 (1997), 1-21.
[9] G. Blower, Linear systems and determinantal random point fields, J. Math. Anal. Appl. 335 (2009), 311-334.
[10] G. Blower, On linear systems and $\tau$ functions associated with Lamé's equation and Painlevé's equation VI, J. Math. Anal. Appl. 376 (2011), 294-316.
[11] G. Blower, On tau functions for orthogonal polynomials and matrix models, J. Phys. A 44 (2011), 285202.
[12] A. Borodin and P. Deift, Fredholm determinants, Jimbo-Miwa-Ueno $\tau$-functions and representation theory, Comm. Pure Appl. Math. 55 (2002), 1160-2030.
[13] C. Brett, Sampling from the spectrum of Hill's equation (Ph.D. Thesis, Lancaster, 2015).
[14] Y.V. Brezhnev, What does integrability of finite-gap or soliton potentials mean? Philos. Trans. R. Soc. Lond. Ser. A Math. Phys. Eng. Sci. 366 (2008), 923-945.
[15] W. Burnside, On a class of automorphic functions, Proc. London Math. Soc. 23 (1891) 49-88.
[16] W. Burnside, Further note on automorphic functions, Proc. London Math. Soc. 23 (1891) 281-295.
[17] D.G. Crowdy, C.C. Green, E.H. Kropf and M.M.S. Nasser, the Schottky-Klein prime function: a theoretical and computational tool for applications, IMA J. Appl. Math. 81 (2016), 589-628.
[18] D. Crowdy and J. Marshall, Analytical formulae for the Kirchhoff-Routh path function in multiply connected domains, Proc. R. Soc. A 461 (2005), 2477-2501.
[19] E.B. Davies, Linear Operators and their Spectra, (Cambridge University Press, 2007).
[20] F.J. Dyson, Fredholm determinants and inverse scattering problems, Commun. Math. Phys. 47 (1976), 171-183.
[21] K.-J. Engel and R. Nagel, One parameter semigroups for linear evolution equations, Springer-Verlag, New York, 2000.
[22] N. Ercolani and H.P. McKean, Geometry of KdV. IV: Abel sums, Jacobi variety and theta function in the scattering case, Invent. Math. 99 (1990), 483-544.
[23] J.D. Fay, Theta functions on Riemann surfaces, Lecture Notes in Mathematics 352, Springer, Berlin 1973.
[24] N.C. Freeman and J.J.C. Nimmo, Soliton solutions of the Korteweg- de Vries and Kadomtsev - Petviashvili equations: the Wronskian technique, Proc. Roy. Soc. London Ser. A 389 (1983), 319-329.
[25] J. Garnett and E. Trubowitz, Gaps and bands of one dimensional periodic Schrödinger operators II, Comment. Math. Helv. 62 (1987), 18-37.
[26] I.M. Gelfand and L.A. Dikii, Integrable nonlinear equations and the Liouville theorem, Funct. Anal. Appl. 13 (1979), 6-15.
[27] I.M. Gelfand and B.M. Levitan, On the determination of a differential equation from its spectral function, Izvestiya Akad. Nauk SSSR Ser. Mat. 15 (1951), 309-360).
[28] F. Gesztesy, Integrable systems in the infinite genus limit, Differential and Integral Equations 14 (2001), 671-700.
[29] F. Gesztesy and H. Holden, Soliton equations and their algebro-geometric solutions Volume I: (1+1)-dimensional continuous models, (Cambridge University Press, 2003).
[30] F. Gesztesy and B. Simon, The xi function, Acta Math. 176 (1996), 49-71.
[31] F. Gesztesy and R. Weikard, Picard potentials and Hill's equation on a torus, Acta Math. 176 (1996), 73-107.
[31'] W. Hayman, Meromorphic functions, (Oxford University Press, 1964).
[32] E. Hille, Lectures on Ordinary Differential Equations, (Addison-Wesley, 1968).
[33] M. Jimbo and T. Miwa, Monodromy preserving deformation of linear ordinary differential equations with rational coefficients II Phys. D. 2 (1981), 407-448.
[34] R. Johnson and J. Moser, The rotation number for almost periodic potentials, Comm. Math. Phys. 84, (1982), 403-438.
[35] V.G. Kac, Infinite dimensional Lie algebras, (Cambridge University Press, 1985).
[36] K. Kajiwara, T. Masuda, M. Noumi, Y. Ohta, and Y. Yamada, Determinant formulas for the Toda and discrete Toda equations, Funkcial. Ekvac. 44 (2001), 291-307.
[37] S. Kamvissis, Inverse scattering as an infinite period limit, C. R. Acad. Sci. Paris Sér I 325 (1997) 969-974.
[38] H. Kato and S. Saito, Generalization of the Boson-Fermion equivalence and Fay's addition theorem, Lett. Math. Phys. 18 (1989), 177-183.
[39] I.M. Krichever, The integration of nonlinear equations by the methods of algebraic geometry, Funct. Anal. Appl. 11 (1978), 12-26.
[40] I.M. Krichever, Elliptic solutions of the Kadomcev-Petviashvili equations, and integrable systems of particles, Funct Anal. Appl. 14 (1980), 282-290.
[41] I.M. Krichever, Vector bundles and Lax equations on algebraic curves, Comm. Math. Phys. 229 (2002), 229-269.
[42] I.M. Krichever and S.P. Novikov, Holomorphic bundles and nonlinear equations, Physica D 3 (1981), 267-293.
[43] S. Lang, Introduction to algebraic and abelian functions, Second edition, Springer, New York, 1982.
[44] R. S. Maier, Lamé polynomials, hyperelliptic reductions and Lamé band structure, Philos. Trans. R. Soc. Lond. Ser. A Math. Phys. Eng. Sci. 366 (2008), 1115-1153.
[45] S.V. Manakov, The inverse scattering transform for the time dependent Schrödinger equation and the Kadomtsev-Petviashvili equation, Physica 3 D (1981), 420-427.
[46] V.B. Matveev, Darboux transformation and explicit solutions of the Kadomtcev-
-Petviaschvily equation, depending upon functional parameters, Lett. Math. Phys 3 (1979), 213-216.
[47] H.P. McKean, Geometry of KDV. III: determinants and unimodular isospectral flows, Commun. Pure Appl. Math. 45 (1992), 389-415.
[48] H.P. McKean, Fredholm determinants, Cent. Eur. J. Math. 9 (2011), 205-243.
[49] H. McKean and V. Moll, Elliptic curves: function theory, geometry, arithmetic, (Cambridge University Press, 1999).
[50] H.P. McKean and P. van Moerbeke, The spectrum of Hill's equation, Invent. Math. 30 (1975), 217-274.
[51] H.P. McKean and E. Trubowitz, Hill's operator and hyperelliptic function theory in the presence of infinitely many branch points, Comm. Pure Appl. Nath. 29 (1976), 143-226.
[52] H.P. McKean and E. Trubowitz, Hill's surfaces and their theta functions, Bull. Amer. Math. Soc. 84 (1978), 1042-1085.
[53] A.V. Megretskii, V.V. Peller and S.R. Treil, The inverse spectral problem for self-adjoint Hankel operators, Acta Math. 174 (1995), 241-309.
[54] M. L. Mehta, Random Matrices, Second Edition, (Academic press, 1991).
[55] T. Miwa, M. Jimbo, and E. Date, Solitons: Differential equations, symmetries, and infinite dimensional algebras, Cambridge University Press, 2000.
[56] M. Mulase, Cohomological structure in soliton equations and Jacobian varieties, J. Differential Geom. 19 (1984), 403-430.
[57] D. Mumford, Tata Lectures on Theta II, Birkhäuser, Boston, 1984.
[58] N.K. Nikolski, Operators, Functions and Systems: An Easy Reading. Volume 1, (American Mathematical Society, 2002).
[59] S. Novikov, S.V. Manakov, L.P. Pitaevskii and V.E. Zakharov, Theory of Solitons, the Inverse Scattering Method, Consultants Bureau, New York and London, 1984).
[60] V.V. Peller, Hankel operators and their applications, (Springer-Verlag, New York, 2003).
[61] C. Pöppe, The Fredholm determinant method for the KdV equations, Physica 13 D (1984), 137-160.
[62] C. Pöppe and D.H. Sattinger, Fredholm determinants and the $\tau$ function for the Kadomtsev -Petviashvili hierarchy, Publ. Re. Inst. Math. Sci. 24 (1988), 505-538.
[63] M. van der Put and M.F. Singer, Galois theory of linear differential equations, (Springer, Berlin, 2003).
[64] G. Segal and G. Wilson, Loop groups and equations of KdV type, Inst. Hautes Études Sci. Publ. Math. 61 (1985), 5-65.
[65] I.R. Shafarevich, Basic algebraic geometry, (Springer, Berlin, 1977).
[66] T. Shiota, Characterization of Jacobian varieties in terms of soliton equations, Invent. Math. 83 (1986), 333-382.
[67] B. Simon, Trace ideals and their applications, second edition, (American Mathematical Society, 2005).
[68] C.A. Tracy and H. Widom, Fredholm determinants, differential equations and matrix models, Comm. Math. Phys. 163 (1994), 33-72.
[69] M. Trubowitz, The inverse problem for periodic potentials, Commun. Pure Appl. Math. 30 (1977), 321-337.
[70] G.L. Vasconcelos, J.S. Marshall and D.G. Crowdy, Secondary Schottky-Klein prime functions associated with multiply connected planar domains, Proc. Roy. Soc. London A 471, 2014,
[71] V.E. Zakharov, 'The inverse scattering method', pp 243-285 in Solitons, R.K. Bullough and P.J. Caudrey, (Springer-Verlag, 1980).
[72] V.E. Zakharov and A. Shabat, A plan for integrating the nonlinear equations of mathematical physics by the method of the inverse scattering problem. I., Funct. Anal. Appl. 8 (1975), 226-235.
[73] T. Zhang and S. Venakides, Periodic limit of inverse scattering, Comm. Pure Appl. Math. 46 (1993), 819-865.

